



Class _____

Book _____

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT



SCHOOL HISTORY

OF

FLORIDA.

BY

EDWIN L. GREEN, Ph.D.

Professor of Greek in Central University, Richmond, Ky.

BALTIMORE, 1898 :

WILLIAMS & WILKINS COMPANY,
PUBLISHERS.

14350

COPYRIGHT, 1898
EDWIN L. GREEN



TWO COPIES RECEIVED.

50679 —

Aug 30. 98

2nd copy,
1898

F311
679

TO

HON. WILLIAM N. SHEATS,

To whom, for his generous encouragement, this book is gratefully
dedicated by the author, who himself is a son of Florida.

PREFACE.

The Honorable Superintendent of Public Instruction of Florida has for some time endeavored to obtain a history of the State for use in the public schools. Hearing that the author had been devoting study to Florida, he suggested that a book be written suited to the needs of his schools; and this work is then due first of all to his kind suggestion, but also to the generous encouragement given at all times, especially in the securing of a publisher. The author has made an attempt to express in part his appreciation of this kindness by dedicating his humble book to the Honorable Superintendent William N. Sheats.

This history is, as the title indicates, a school book, designed to give to the children of the schools a knowledge of the fascinating history of their native State, and the author has endeavored to keep their requirements in view, especially in employing a plain and simple style. Each chapter is divided into sections furnished with headings explaining their contents. Questions have been placed at the bottom of the page to meet a possible want, and the principal dates have been set in the margin, in order that the scholar may the more easily keep correct the course of events. Nearly a hundred illustrations, among them pictures of nearly all the governors, add much to the interest and value of the book. Maps drawn from the best sources illustrate discoveries, settlements, and campaigns. The narrative, which extends from the earliest period to the present, is based on the highest authorities, some of whom may be found in the list of

books inserted for the use of teachers. The *History of Florida* by the Floridian author, Mr. G. R. Fairbanks, requires special mention not only because of its great excellence, but because this book owes much to it, often following it in preference to other authorities. Much information concerning West Florida has been obtained in the *Historical Sketches of Colonial Florida*, by Mr. R. L. Campbell, of Pensacola. Both of these works are unfortunately out of print.

Dr. Wm. T. Thom, of Baltimore, Md., has most kindly read and criticised the manuscript, and Prof. H. B. Adams, of the Johns Hopkins University, generously examined it in part. Words of encouragement have been received from Rev. C. P. Walker, of Madison, Fla., and from Prof. B. C. Graham, of Tampa, Fla. Hon. Wm. N. Sheats, Mr. L. R. Christhilf, of Baltimore, Md., Mr. J. C. Green, of Pensacola, Fla., Judge Broome, of Orlando, Fla., Dr. R. Braden Moore, of Vineland, N. J., and other friends, have kindly aided in securing photographs for illustrations.

Information concerning illustrations of historical value, in particular, the pictures of those governors not obtained for the present edition, and also all corrections to the present work will be gladly received and acknowledged.

E. L. GREEN.

Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Md.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

Florida discovered before 1513—Fountain of Youth—Juan Ponce de Leon's discovery of Florida—His attempt to settle the same—The name "Florida".

CHAPTER II.

Panfilo de Narvaez—Hernando de Soto—Tristan de Luna.

CHAPTER III.

Coming of the French to Florida—Charles Fort—Fort Caroline—Arrival of Menendez.

CHAPTER IV.

Founding of St. Augustine—Destruction of Fort Caroline—Slaughter of Ribaut and his men.

CHAPTER V.

Mutiny—Activity of Menendez—His visit to Spain—Notable revenge of Dominic de Gourgues—Return of Menendez—His death—Sir Francis Drake at St. Augustine.

CHAPTER VI.

Indians: History—Civilization—Religion.

CHAPTER VII.

Spanish Missions—Fort Marion—Pensacola.

CHAPTER VIII.

Encroachments of the English—Spanish invasions of South Carolina—Governor Moore invades Florida—War between Pensacola and Mobile.

CHAPTER IX.

General Oglethorpe attacks St. Augustine—Invasion of Georgia by Governor Monteano.

CHAPTER X.

Condition of Florida in 1763—Transfer of Florida to Great Britain—East and West Florida.

CHAPTER XI.

Florida under British rule—Inducements to settlers—Dr. Turnbull's colony at New Smyrna—Representative government—Revolutionary War—Panton, Leslie and Co.—Alexander McGillivray.

CHAPTER XII.

British rule in Florida, *continued*—"Old Rory"—Don Bernardo de Galvez captures Pensacola—Bahama Islands seized—Retransfer of Florida to Spain.

CHAPTER XIII.

Second Spanish occupation—Boundary lines—General William Augustus Bowles—Two new Republics—United States soldiers in Florida.

CHAPTER XIV.

War of 1812—Tecumseh's visit to the Creeks and Seminoles—Percy and Nicholls—Jackson at Pensacola.

CHAPTER XV.

Republic of Florida—Seminoles War—Jackson invades the Floridas—Arbuthnot and Ambrister—Second capture of Pensacola—Provisional government—Restoration to Spain.

CHAPTER XVI.

Purchase of the Floridas—Jackson appointed provisional governor—Territorial government.

CHAPTER XVII.

Florida as a Territory—Site of the Capital—Growth—Banks—Trouble with Indians.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Seminole War—Dade's massacre—Battle of the Withlacoochee—General Scott—General Jesup—Capture of Osceola.

CHAPTER XIX.

Seminole War, *continued*—General Taylor—Major-General Macomb—Bloodhounds—Capture of "Wild Cat"—The "gallant" Worth—Return of "Wild Cat"—End of War.

CHAPTER XX.

Territorial governors—Admission of Florida into the Union—Railroads—Florida in 1860.

CHAPTER XXI.

Secession—Seizure of Forts and Arsenals—Fort Pickens—Operations of 1861—Coast held by Northern forces.

CHAPTER XXII.

Civil War, *continued*—St. Johns Bluff—Negro soldiers—Captain Dickinson—Olustee—John Milton—Surrender.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Florida after the Civil War—Reconstruction—Impeachments of Governor Reed—Public schools—Finance—Return of the Democrats to power—Election of 1876.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Opening of a new era—Development of the public schools—Constitution of 1885—General progress of the State.

SOME WORKS RELATING TO FLORIDA.

This list contains only such works as are to be obtained, and is for the use of teachers who may wish to know more about the history of Florida than can be learned from a school book. It is very much regretted that Mr. G. R. Fairbanks' *History of Florida* is no longer in print. Mrs. E. C. Long, of Tallahassee, has prepared a history whose appearance it is hoped will not be long delayed.

Brinton, D. G., <i>The Floridian Peninsula</i> . D. McKay, 23 South Ninth street, Philadelphia.....	\$1.00
Chambers, H. E., <i>West Florida</i> . The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore	\$.25
Drake, S. A., <i>Florida</i> . Little, Brown & Co., Boston....	\$.25
Fairbanks, G. R., <i>History of St. Augustine</i> . H. Drew & Bro., Jacksonville	\$.75
Fiske, J., <i>Discovery of America</i> , 2 vols. Houghton, Mifflin & Co., Boston	\$4.00
Gatschet, A. S., <i>A Migration-Legend of the Creeks</i> . D. McKay, 23 South Ninth street, Philadelphia.....	\$3.00
Long, E. C., <i>Florida Breezes</i> . Ashmead Bros., Jacksonville.	\$1.00
Moore, Willson M., <i>The Seminoles of Florida</i> . American Printing House, 1019 Cherry street, Philadelphia.....	\$.75
Parkman, F., <i>Pioneers of France in the New World</i> . Little, Brown & Co., Boston	\$1.12
Reid, M., <i>Osceola, the Seminole</i> , H. Drew & Bro., Jacksonville	\$1.50
Reynolds, C. B., <i>Old St. Augustine</i> . H. Drew & Bro., Jacksonville.	\$1.50
Schaif, J. T., <i>The Confederate States' Navy</i> . Rogers & Sherwood, New York.	\$3.50
Scott, W. A., <i>The Repudiation of State Debts</i> . Crowell & Co., 46 E. 14th street, New York.....	\$1.50

Shea, J. G., *Ancient Florida*, in second vol. of J. Winsor's Narrative and Critical History of America [excellent]. Houghton, Mifflin & Co., Boston\$5.50

The following papers may be consulted on the Seminoles and the earlier tribes :

Cushing, F. H., *Exploration of Ancient Key Dwellers' Remains on the Gulf Coast of Florida*. 1896. Am.Philosophical Society, 104 South Fifth street, Philadelphia.

Maccauley, C., *The Seminoles of Florida*. Annual Report of Bureau of Ethnology, 1883-84, Washington, D. C.

Moore, C. B., *Certain River Mounds of Duval County, Florida, etc.* Vol. 8, Jour. of Acad. of Nat. Scien. of Phila. The Levytype Company, Philadelphia.





JUAN PONCE DE LEON.

From Winsor's Narr. and Crit. Hist.

HISTORY OF FLORIDA.

CHAPTER I.

FLORIDA DISCOVERED BEFORE 1513—FOUNTAIN OF YOUTH—JUAN PONCE DE LEON'S DISCOVERY OF FLORIDA—HIS ATTEMPT TO SETTLE THE SAME—THE NAME "FLORIDA".

FLORIDA DISCOVERED BEFORE JUAN PONCE DE LEON. According to the common story Juan Ponce de Leon was the discoverer of Florida. But an old map, drawn ten years before Ponce de Leon sailed on his memorable voyage, shows a peninsula exactly where the one named Florida was discovered.

1497 John Cabot explored the eastern coast of America in 1497; but it is very certain that he did not sail as far south as Florida. He could not have carried back information concerning land of which he had no knowledge. About this same time Amerigo Vespucci was making a secret examination of what every one in those days supposed to be the southern coast of Asia, and he has left a letter telling about his voyage. A comparison of the old map and

Q. Who discovered Florida according to the common story? What does an old map show? Tell about John Cabot. What other exploration was going on at this same time? What did Amerigo Vespucci leave behind him? What appears from a comparison of his letter and the old map?

of Amerigo Vespucci's letter makes it appear that he who gave his name to America was the first to see Florida. It is also possible that the old map-maker obtained information from traders who had visited the Floridian peninsula. One thing is certain: that all remembrance of any voyage before that of Juan Ponce de Leon passed away completely from the mind of man, though it is equally certain that he was not the first to see Florida.

FOUNTAIN OF YOUTH. There was a story among the Indians of the West Indies that on the island of



SILVER SPRINGS.

Bimini, one of the Lucayan (*Bahama*) islands, there existed a fountain, whose magical water healed the sick, made the old young again, and bestowed immortal youth on all who bathed therein. Indians from the Bahamas, from Cuba, and even from Yucatan and Honduras, were said to have gone in search of this

fountain. As they had never returned, it was fondly believed that they were living in beautiful Bimini in the enjoyment of eternal youth.

That the Indians should have believed in a magical fountain is not strange. Beliefs of this kind have existed in various parts of the world, caused by real springs; and so it may well be that some one of the wonderful springs in Florida may have brought about the story of Bimini and its mystical fountain. The old Spanish historian, Gomara, explains the origin of the tale in a way that might be expected from a knightly Spaniard. According to him the story arose because in that region dwelt women of such rare beauty that old men, gazing upon them, felt themselves restored to the vigor of youth.

As the Spaniards had heard of a Fountain of Youth in Asia, and as they imagined at first that America was part of Asia, they readily believed that the magical waters were not far away.

JUAN PONCE DE LEON. One cavalier listened eagerly to the stories about Bimini. This was Juan Ponce de Leon, who was born in the province
1460 of Leon, Spain, about the year 1460. Arms
1521 were his professions from his earliest youth.

He fought before the walls of Granada, and when Columbus sailed on his second voyage in 1493, Ponce de Leon was one of his companions. There is

Q. In what other way might the old map-maker have heard of Florida? What thing is certain? What story was there among the Indians of the West Indies? Who were said to have gone in search of Bimini? Why were they supposed to have found it? Why is the belief in the fountain not strange? What may have given rise to the story?

a story that he engaged in a conspiracy against the Great Discoverer. In Hayti Ponce de Leon won distinction in the wars against the natives; and hearing of gold to be found in Boriquen (*Porto Rico*), secured a commission to conquer it, which he accomplished after a severe struggle, only to find himself supplanted as governor by one of the court favorites.

It was now while he was in retirement that he first heard of the fabulous Fountain of Youth. Here was just the thing. What could he not do with all his wealth of experience coupled with eternal youth? So dazzled was the mind of every one by the discoveries made in the twenty years since the first voyage of Columbus, that when Ponce de Leon applied at the Spanish court for a patent to discover and settle Bimini, the patent was secured, and no one deemed the discovery impossible. He obtained his patent 1512 in February, 1512. He was to settle Bimini Feb. within three years after the discovery, and if no one had been there before him, he was to be governor of Bimini for life, with the title of *adclantado*, or *governor*. At once he began to fit out an expedition, but, trouble arising with the Indians in Porto Rico, he was detained in that island till the following year.*

PONCE DE LEON DISCOVERS FLORIDA. In March, 1513, Ponce de Leon set out with three caravels from

Q. Give Gomara's account of the origin of the story. Why did the Spaniards readily believe in the fountain? Who listened eagerly to the story? Tell of Ponce de Leon's life till we find him in Hayti. Tell of him in Hayti and Boriquen. How could the Fountain of Youth aid him? Why was the patent to discover and settle Bimini granted him?

*1512 The usual date given for the discovery of Florida, has been proven wrong.

St. Germain, in Porto Rico. As Bimini was supposed to be one of the Bahama Islands, he at first
1513 cruised among these; but the search was not
Mar. successful, and so after refitting at Guana-
hani, he steered toward the northwest,
having heard of land in that direction. On Easter
Sunday, March 27, a low, flat country was
Mar. sighted, along which Ponce coasted until he
27 reached latitude $30^{\circ} 8'$, not far from the site
of St. Augustine. Here he anchored and
Apr. 2 landed on the second of April. There was a
custom among the early discoverers of giving
a name to their discovery, taken from some peculiarity
attaching to the day on which the object was first
sighted. Accordingly, Ponce de Leon gave to this
new country the name of Florida, from *Pascua Florida*,
the Spanish name for Easter Sunday. Some writers
state that Florida was so named because of
1513 its flowery appearance. Six days after he had
Apr. 8 landed, planting a cross, unfurling a banner
to the breeze, swearing allegiance to his sov-
ereign, Ponce de Leon took possession of the country
in the name of the King of Spain.

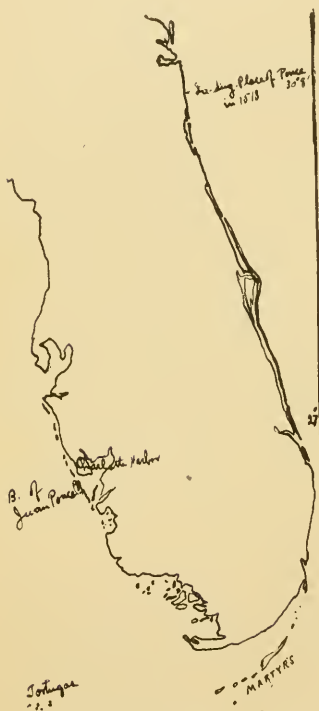
FAILURE TO DISCOVER THE FOUNTAIN OF YOUTH.
Turning the prows of his vessels to the south, the dis-
coverer explored the southern coasts of Florida, find-
ing and naming the Martyrs and the Tortugas. Sail-

Q. How soon was Ponce to settle Bimini? What office was he to receive? Why did he not set out at once for Bimini? From what place did he start? Where did he first explore? Why did he steer to the northwest? When did he first sight land? Where did he go ashore? What custom did the early discoverers have? Why was the new country named Florida?

ing around the extremity of the peninsula, Ponce ran up the western shore to a bay in latitude $27^{\circ} 30'$, which for a long period bore his name. Worn out and disappointed in his search for the Fountain of Youth, he finally sailed himself for Porto Rico, leaving

his lieutenant, Ortubia, to continue the exploration. Ponce de Leon had scarcely reached Porto Rico, when Ortubia arrived and reported that he had been successful in his search for Bimini, but that the island contained no fountain of magic waters.

PONCE DE LEON'S ATTEMPT TO SETTLE FLORIDA. Ponce proceeded to the court of Spain, where his voyage furnished the wits much merriment, now that it had proved a failure. However, he secured a second patent to settle Florida within three years from the time he should set sail. As was the case with the first



PONCE DE LEON'S FIRST VOYAGE.

Q. Describe the ceremony of taking possession. Tell of Ponce's explorations on the southern coasts. How far up the western shore did he sail? Give an account of Ortubia. How was Ponce's voyage now treated at court? What patent did Ponce secure? How was he delayed?

voyage, so now he was delayed by a war with the Indians of the West Indies, for the Caribs had taken arms against the Spaniards, and Ponce de Leon was called on to command against them. Meeting with a signal disaster at the outset, he turned over the command to one of his captains, and retired to Porto Rico, where he became a surly alcalde.

He had now settled down to quiet service of his king, when his ambition and his avarice were stirred by the exploits of Cortes in Mexico, which threatened

to eclipse the fame of the earlier discoverers.

1521 Accordingly, in February, 1521, he wrote to

Charles V that he was going shortly to the "Island Florida" for the purpose of settling it, and to see if it was really an island or was connected "with the land where Diego Velasquez is (*Mexico*) or any other." Ponce spent his entire fortune on the outfit of his expedition. When he set sail, he carried with him in two ships, colonists, clergymen for these, priests for the Indians, horses, cattle, sheep, and swine. It is not known where the expedition landed, though very likely on the western coast. As the colonists were attempting to erect dwellings, the natives attacked them with great fury; and Ponce de Leon was himself wounded in the thigh by an arrow, while bravely fighting at the head of his men. The colonists were driven to their ships, and all idea of settling Florida was given up. Sick in heart as well as in body, Ponce de Leon sailed for

Q. How did he succeed against the Caribs? What aroused him from his retirement? What did he write to Charles V? Tell of his expedition. Where did he land? What attack was made on the colonists? How was Ponce wounded? Where did he die? Give the observation of the old chronicler.

Cuba, where in a few days death released him from his pain. "Thus," says an old chronicler, "fate delights to reverse the schemes of men. The discovery that Juan Ponce flattered himself was to lead to a means of perpetuating his life, had the ultimate effect of hastening his death."

VOYAGES ALONG THE GULF COAST. Before Ponce de Leon made his second voyage, Diego Miruelo sailed up the western coast of Florida in 1516 on a trading expedition. He discovered a bay which long bore his name, and which was probably Pensacola Bay. A year later Fernandez de Cordova landed on the western shore, but the hostility of the natives compelled him to depart. In 1519 Francis de Garay, governor of Jamaica, despatched an expedition under the command of Pineda, who sailed along the entire Gulf coast of Florida, passed the Mississippi River, and coasted to Pánuco in Mexico. This voyage showed that Florida was not an island, but a part of the mainland. If Ponce de Leon had heard of Pineda's voyage before he sailed himself in 1521, he seems to have doubted what was told him, as in his letter, dated Feb. 10, 1521, he speaks of the "Island Florida".

SPANIARDS ON THE ATLANTIC COAST. In 1520 Lucas Vasquez de Ayllon, a rich officer of San Domingo, sent out two ships which landed about where Charleston, S. C., now stands, in the province of Chicora, for the purpose of

Q. Tell about the voyage of Diego Miruelo. Tell of Fernandez de Cordova. Tell of Pineda's voyage. What was shown by this? Did Ponce de Leon believe Florida a part of the mainland? Why did de Ayllon's ships land in Chicora? What race was heard of?

catching Indians to be used as slaves. It is a pity that his men did not meet with the race of giants of which they were told. The story goes that these giants were made so artificially by a process known only to certain learned and wise doctors. The nurse of the infant, it is said, was fed on very nutritious food. Besides this the child's bones were softened by the application of plasters of magic herbs, and, after some days, were stretched, a process which was repeated from time to time till the child was enabled to grow taller than his fellows. There was also another tale told to de Ayllon's men about a race of people who had tails like horses' tails, which they whisked about right merrily. But none of these men were seen.

Six years later this same de Ayllon attempted to plant a Spanish colony on the very spot where the English afterwards built Jamestown. Winter 1526 came on before the colonists were prepared to meet it; many perished from the cold, the Indians became hostile, de Ayllon himself died of a pestilential disease, and, finally, the colonists began to quarrel among themselves. The settlement was in consequence broken up.

In 1524 the Spanish government sent out Stephen Gomez, who examined the eastern coast of America from Labrador to Florida, showing that the 1524 coast-line of the latter extended indefinitely to the northeast. But northern countries were not considered of much value in those days. "To the south, to the south," cries the historian, "for the

Q. Tell how giants were made in Chicora. Of what other race did de Ayllon's men hear? Give an account of his attempt to settle at Jamestown. What was shown by Gomez's voyage in 1524? What does the historian cry?

great and exceeding riches of the Equinoctial: they that seek riches must not go into the cold and frozen North." There was a belief at that time that gold could be found only in hot countries.

FLORIDA NOT THE SAME AS NOW. According to Spanish writers the name Florida belonged to all North America north of Mexico. When the French began to lay claim to Canada and call it new France, they were trespassing on territory claimed by Spain as a part of Florida. But to her protests the king of France gave no heed. Moreover, he declared that the kings of Spain and of Portugal were undertaking to monopolize the earth. If, he said, Adam had made them his heirs, it was nothing but just for them to produce a copy of his will; and until they should do so, he would feel at perfect liberty to take whatever he could lay his hands on.

In 1607 the English colony of Virginia limited Florida to the country south of the 34th parallel of latitude, south of a line running through Cape Fear. With characteristic English readiness in appropriating territory the Carolina charter of 1663 fixed the parallel of $30^{\circ} 45'$ as the southern boundary of that colony. Two years later the line was carried south to 29° , about fifty miles below St. Augustine, which would have left to the Spaniards only the end of the peninsula. But, in reality, the Savannah River

Q. Where only was it thought that gold could be found? What did Spain claim under the name Florida? Tell about the French king's reply to the protest of the king of Spain. Give an account of the English encroachments.

remained the southern limit of the English colonies till the settlement of Georgia in 1732, when the

1732 Georgia colonists gradually fixed the boundary between Georgia and Florida as it now is.

1721 In the meantime the French laid claim to the Mississippi Valley under the name of Louisiana. A peaceful arrangement, made before 1721, fixed the Perdido River as the dividing line between Florida and the French possession.

When the English came into possession of Florida in 1763, they divided Florida into East and

1763 West Florida, adding to the latter about half of Alabama and Mississippi. This division was retained by Spain when she recovered Florida twenty years later, though West Florida was gradually reduced to its present size.

1821 After Spain surrendered the two Floridas to the United States in 1821, Congress united them into one Territory.

Q. What did the French claim as Louisiana? What became of the dividing line between Florida and Louisiana? Tell about the division into East and West Florida. What change did the United States make?

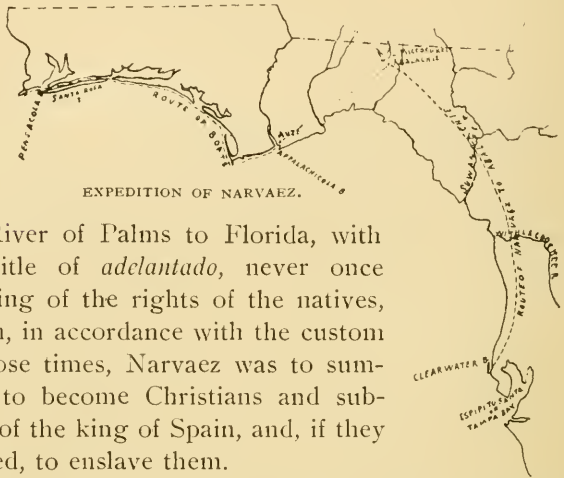
CHAPTER II.

PANFILO DE NARVAEZ—HERNANDO DE SOTO— TRISTAN DE LUNA.

CORTES' SUCCESS STIMULATES THE DESIRE FOR CONQUEST: PANFILO DE NARVAEZ. The success of Cortes in Mexico filled the minds of the Spaniards with visions of rich empires waiting for daring adventurers to come and take possession. This ignis fatuus led many brave men to the wilds of the northern country, from which the Spaniards had hitherto turned away to seek for the gold of the South; for only in the warm countries did they believe that precious metal could be found. The first to fit out an expedition to conquer himself a kingdom in the North was Panfilo de Narvaez, who had been sent out in 1520 to pursue Cortes, but had failed; for one stormy night Cortes suddenly fell on his sleeping camp, took Narvaez himself prisoner, and won over his entire army. In the melee Narvaez lost an eye. After his release he tried to obtain redress at the Spanish court, but here again Cortes defeated him, this time through Mexican gold. And so Narvaez was compelled to seek some new land rich in gold and ready for the Spanish conqueror, as he too fondly dreamed.

Q. What effect did the success of Cortes have? Why had the Spaniards not tried to explore the northern country? Who was the first to undertake to explore in this region? Tell of his experience with Cortes in 1520. What success did he have at court?

Accordingly, Charles V gave him a patent to conquer and colonize the country on the Gulf of Mexico from



the River of Palms to Florida, with the title of *adelantado*, never once thinking of the rights of the natives, whom, in accordance with the custom of those times, Narvaez was to summon to become Christians and subjects of the king of Spain, and, if they refused, to enslave them.

NARVAEZ REACHES APALACHEE. Narvaez started on his voyage June 17, 1527, but the desertion of part of his men at San Domingo and the loss of two vessels in a hurricane delayed him for 1527 nearly a year, and it was not until April, 1528, that he finally set out for Florida, carrying 1528 four hundred men and eighty horses. His April pilot was Diego Miruelo, probably the same Miruelo who had visited Florida in 1516. A storm drove Narvaez's vessels into a bay somewhere north of Tampa, perhaps Clearwater Bay. Here the Spaniards landed and took possession of the country, thinking all the while that they were not far from Mex-

Q. What country was Narvaez to conquer and colonize? How were the natives to be treated? Give an account of Narvaez's expedition, the time of its starting, and its size. Who was Diego Miruelo?

ico, a mistake that in the end cost the lives of all but four out of the entire three hundred who marched into the interior in quest of a fancied empire. About one hundred men were left on board the vessels with instructions to sail along the coast and wait at a certain bay known to the pilot. This the remainder April 19 of the expedition was expected to reach after exploring the inland country. On the 19th of April Narvaez struck out in a northeasterly direction, but on meeting Indians wearing ornaments of gold he changed his course a few points to the north, since to all his questions about the place from which the precious metal was obtained the natives had answered by pointing to the north and repeating "Abalachie, Abalachie". To the Spaniards' excited fancy "Abalachie" was another Mexico, and so all efforts were made to reach that country. Provisions were scarce; the maize in the Indian fields was not yet ripe; many of the trees which thickly covered the sandy soil were fallen, and the guides selected a road as much obstructed as possible; several rivers had to be crossed; but "Abalachie" was to be the end of toil and hardship. Narvaez plodded on till, on the June 25 25th of June, "Abalachie" was reached, and his eyes looked not on a magnificent capital of a wealthy kingdom, but on an Indian hamlet of forty wretched cabins. This native village seems to have been on Miccosukee Lake, not far from the northern border of Florida. But the Indian guides had misled the Spaniards, for gold was really obtained in "Abalachie", which was the name of a district that extended

Q. Tell about the landing of the expedition. What mistake was made? How was the expedition divided? Give the direction of the line of march inland.

to North Georgia, where the remains of ancient gold mines are still to be seen.

AUTÉ. The Spaniards remained at "Abalachie" about a month, constantly harassed by the natives, almost on the verge of starvation, until hunger compelled them to seek for Auté, distant a nine days' journey, which was represented as abounding in corn, squashes, and gourds, with a plentiful supply of fish



INDIAN WARRIOR. *De Bry, 1591.*

in the sea nearby. From "Abalachie" to Auté, the whole way was beset by Indian warriors of immense size, whose arrows could pene-

1528 trate a small-sized tree, as

it appeared to the frightened Spaniards. When Auté was reached, it was found a smoking heap of ashes deserted by its inhabitants. One day more brought them to the shores of a bay (*Apalachicola?*), which received from Narvaez

Q. How did the natives answer Narvaez's questions about the country where gold was obtained? What did he think of "Abalachie"? Give an account of the difficulties of the journey. What was the town of "Abalachie"? Where was it situated? Where was gold really to be found? Tell of the stay at "Abalachie". Give an account of Auté. How was the journey to Auté beset?

the name of Bahia de Cavallos (*Bay of Horses*); but even here the Indians did not allow them to catch fish and oysters in peace; and, to add to their sufferings, sickness broke out in August.

THE SPANIARDS BUILD BOATS IN ORDER TO ESCAPE. It is to be remembered that the ships were to wait for Narvaez at a bay of which the pilot knew. The bay was not found as expected, and so the vessels returned at once to the harbor at which the expedition had landed, too late, however, to catch Narvaez; nor was he ever seen, although they cruised along the coast for nearly a year. The Spaniards at Bahia de Cavallos were in despair; their ships were not in sight; their food supply was limited; and sickness had reduced the majority to mere skeletons: nothing remained but to build boats and to try to reach Mexico. In six weeks five boats, each twenty-two cubits long, were ready for the water, a truly marvellous achievement, considering that there was but a single carpenter, though aided by every one able to work. Nails and bolts were made at a rude forge out of guns, swords, stirrups, and bridle-bits; ropes were woven from the tails and manes of the horses and from palmetto fibre; sails were clothes sewn together; water was carried in bottles made from the skins of the horses, whose flesh furnished provisions.

VOYAGE, SHIPWRECK, SURVIVORS. On the 22d of September these five frail boats, utterly unfit to go to

Q. In what condition was Auté found? What bay was reached? How did the Spaniards fare here? Give an account of Narvaez's ships. What were the Spaniards at Bahia de Cavallos compelled to do? Tell of the boats. How were nails and ropes obtained? What were sails made of? How was water carried?

sea, set out along the northern shore of the Gulf of Mexico, each loaded to the water's edge with 1528 forty-eight men. Narvaez led the way in Sept. 22 the first boat, putting into the mouths of rivers and creeks from time to time, running between Santa Rosa Island and the mainland, and finally reaching the mouth of a large river (*Mississippi?*) which ran violently into the sea, and where two of the boats, one of them Narvaez's own, were swamped in the current and all on board lost. The remaining three boats were wrecked, one after the other, on the coast of Louisiana or Texas. Their crews fell victims to the cruelty of the Indians or to disease and starvation, till only four were left alive to escape to their countrymen in Mexico after years of wandering among the hunter tribes of southwestern United States. One of these survivors was the treasurer of the expedition, Cabeza de Vaca, who has left us a narrative of the wanderings of himself and his three companions.

HERNANDO DE SOTO. When Cabeza de Vaca returned to Spain, he talked in such a mysterious way about rich provinces through which he had passed, that men desired more than ever to explore the interior of the continent. The next man to try his fortune in the northern country after Narvaez was Hernando de Soto, who was eager to rival



HERNANDO DE SOTO. *From Winsor.*

Cortes and Pizarro, and whose imagination was in consequence stimulated by

the tales of de Vaca. Hernando de Soto came out to the New World at an early age. When Pizarro received reinforcements after his landing in Peru, their leader was Hernando de Soto, who played an honorable and gallant part in the overthrow of the empire of the Incas. On his return to Spain Soto carried as his share of the booty the magnificent sum of one hundred and eighty thousand ducats, part of which was borrowed by the emperor, who the more easily for that reason gave him a patent to conquer and settle the territory formerly granted to Narvaez, and in addition to this the province discovered by de Ayllon. His reputation and his previous good fortune attracted large numbers to his standard. Consequently
1538 when he sailed from Spain in 1538 he carried with him six hundred as high-born and well-trained men as ever went out to try their fortune in the New World. Soto's wife accompanied him to Cuba, where she spent the winter with him and remained to await his return after his departure for Florida in the spring of 1539.

On the 18th of May, 1539, the expedition, consisting of five ships, two caravels, and two pinnaces, sailed from Havana, and in six days made a bay on
1539 the western coast which de Soto named Es-May 18 piritu Santo, because he had discovered it on the 25th of May, the day of the Feast of Pentecost. [This bay was usually known in early narra-

Q. Describe the voyage and shipwreck of the expedition. What became of the crews of the boats lost on the coast of Louisiana or Texas? How many survived to reach Mexico? What has Cabeza de Vaca left behind him? How did he talk in Spain about the provinces he had seen? Who was the second to try his fortune in the northern country?

tives by the name of Espiritu Santo, but is now called Tampa from one of the ancient Indian villages in that region. The name Tampa first appears on a map in Herrera's History published in 1601.] De Soto was not without some knowledge of the coast of Florida before he left Cuba, for he had prudently despatched Juan de Añasco to seek a suitable harbor for the ships, so as not to run the risk of losing them on an unknown shore. Añasco learned in the course of his explorations that there was a Spaniard living among the Indians somewhere on the western coast, who had been captured at the time of Narvaez's expedition.

JUAN ORTIZ. When Panfilo de Narvaez landed in Florida in 1528, he at once sent one of his vessels back to Cuba to inform his wife of his safe arrival; and she despatched this same vessel with supplies for her husband, but it arrived too late to catch him before he marched into the interior. On the shore the sailors saw a letter sticking in a split reed, and, thinking it had been left there by Narvaez, made signs to the natives on the beach to bring it out to them; but these refused to do so, urging by signs that the sailors should themselves come after it. Two young fellows, one of them named Juan Ortiz, a youth of eighteen, rowed ashore. They had scarcely set foot on dry land when the Indians rushed on them, made them prisoners, and carried them to their chief Hirrihigua. Hir-

Q. What had de Soto done in Peru? What share of the booty fell to his lot? What territory did his patent assign him? Why did men flock to his standard? How many went with him? Tell about his wife. Give an account of Soto's expedition. Give an account of the name of Tampa Bay.

rihigua had been most cruelly treated by Narvaez, and was burning to avenge his injuries. Ortiz's companion was tortured to death, and he was himself stretched over a bed of hot coals on a stage made of green sticks of wood. The heat from the coals had begun to roast the flesh on his back, when the lovely young daughter of the chief threw herself at her father's feet and besought him with tears to spare the innocent youth. Her tears prevailed; Ortiz was unbound, and carried to the lodge of her father, where the young maiden and her mother applied healing herbs to his wounds, and tenderly nursed him until he was well again. But to Hirrihigua the sight of the white man was hateful. So he set Ortiz to watch over the Indian graveyard to keep wild beasts from carrying off the dead bodies from the wooden coffins in which they were laid and covered with a board held down by a stone; and the chief threatened that death should be the penalty if he failed to keep the bodies safe. One night Ortiz fell asleep and was suddenly aroused by the crash of a falling board, but in the darkness he could see nothing, so he lay still listening. Presently, he heard a sound as of some animal gnawing a bone, and in the direction of the sound he hurled a dart which caused the noise to cease; but he did not during the night examine to find if he had killed any beast. The morning light revealed a *lion* pierced through with the dart. Ortiz dragged the animal to the village, where his exploit brought kind treatment for several days. But Hirri-

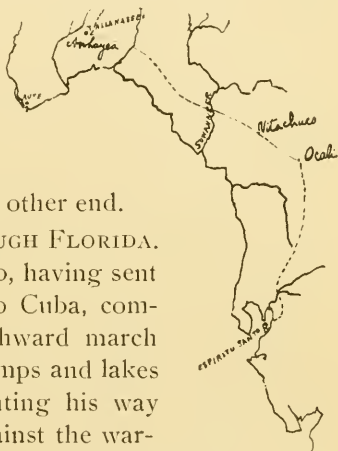
Q. What prudent thing did Soto do? Whom did Añasco hear of? Tell about the vessel Narvaez sent back to his wife. Relate the story of the letter. To whom were the young Spaniards carried? How were they treated? How was Ortiz rescued?

higua could not be satisfied: Ortiz must die. The daughter, however, knew of her father's determination and begged the youth to fly to a neighboring cacique named Mucoso, to whom she was betrothed, and who would protect him for her sake. Mucoso received Ortiz as the maiden had said, and protected him against all the demands of her father, although Hirrihigua in consequence of that protection refused to give his daughter to Mucoso as his bride.

DE SOTO FINDS ORTIZ. When Hernando de Soto arrived in Florida in 1539, Juan Ortiz had now been among the Indians for over ten years, and 1539 had a knowledge of their language which would render him valuable as an interpreter. For this reason, Soto was delighted to hear that Ortiz was at no great distance from Espiritu Santo Bay; for the two natives whom Añasco had carried to Cuba to become interpreters proved utterly useless. Having learned from some native women the direction in which to go to find Ortiz, Soto despatched a lieutenant and a company of horsemen to fetch him. The horsemen had not proceeded very far on their way before they met Ortiz, who had heard of the white men and was endeavoring to reach their camp. He came very near never getting there, for not only had he forgotten his native tongue but he looked so much like an Indian that one of the horsemen tried to run him through with a spear, and would have done so if Ortiz had not

Q. How were Ortiz's wounds cured? What did Hirrihigua next do with Ortiz? How were the corpses of the dead Indians treated? Relate the story of the wild beast which Ortiz killed. What effect did his exploit have? How was he rescued from the cruelty of the chief? How well did Mucoso protect the young Spaniard?

cried out "Xibilla", for Sevilla, the name of his native city and the only word of Spanish he remembered. He remained with Soto during his long wandering and died a few months before him in the country west of the Mississippi River. As an interpreter he was not all that was expected, as he knew only the language of the tribe among whom he had dwelt. Consequently, it was necessary for Soto to take an Indian from each tribe, so that he might converse with one from the last tribe through which the expedition had passed, and so on through a line of Indians until Ortiz was reached. Of course, what was said at one end of the line was very different from what arrived at the other end.



ROUTE OF DE SOTO.

SOTO MARCHES THROUGH FLORIDA.

On the 15th of July, Soto, having sent his largest ships back to Cuba, commenced a northward march among the swamps and lakes of Florida, fighting his way step by step against the warlike natives, who were very

different from the races he had met before in Central America and Peru. Besides the nature

Q. How long was Ortiz among the Indians? Why was Soto delighted to hear he was not far away? Tell about the horsemen sent to find him. Why did he come near being killed? How long did he stay with Soto? Why was he not a good interpreter? What was necessary? How did the words at one end of the line compare with those at the other?

of the country and the fierceness of its inhabitants, another obstacle in the way of the *conquistador* (conqueror) was the lack of provisions, which had to be obtained from the Indian fields. And these were very scattered, furnishing, moreover, very little food, since corn was not yet ripe; so that the Spaniards were compelled to eat the young shoots of corn, palmetto roots, and water cresses. At the end of the second day's journey Soto reached the village of Mucoso, the cacique who had so generously protected Juan Ortiz. Twenty-five leagues more brought him to the Withlacoochee River, and beyond this lay the province of Ocali, where was found a plentiful supply of vegetables, nuts, dried grapes, and other fruits. Leaving Ocali, the Spaniards entered the country ruled by Vitachuco, the most powerful of all the Indian chiefs in Florida. His subjects fought the invaders continually, and on one occasion engaged them in a grand battle, in which, it is said, two hundred Indians who had been forced into a lake, fought for a full day and night without putting foot on bottom. Seven days later the nine hundred prisoners taken in this battle suddenly rose on their white captors and made a desperate struggle to escape, one of them coming very near throttling Soto himself. A large river 1539 (*Suzwannee*) was next crossed with much difficulty, and the town of Anhayea, in the

Q. What did Soto do before commencing his march? Mention difficulties in his way. How did the Indians of Florida compare with those of Central America and Peru? Give an account of the food of the Spaniards. Describe the march as far as Ocali. Tell about Vitachuco and the battle his subjects fought. What did the prisoners do seven days later?

neighborhood of Tallahassee, was reached during the month of October. Here the expedition spent the winter, parties in the meantime exploring the country in every direction.

During the course of the winter Añasco went with a company of horsemen to Auté, where he saw in a grove near the coast the bones of the horses which had belonged to Narvaez's unfortunate men. He afterwards rode to Espiritu Santo Bay in ten days, although Soto had been three months marching from there to Anhayea; and he brought back to the bay near Auté the vessels which had been left at Espiritu Santo Bay when the expedition marched into the interior. These vessels were useful in exploring the coast westward from Auté; and the commandant Maldonado reported on his return that he had found a beautiful harbor (*Pensacola Bay*), which he called Achusee.

In March of the next year Soto left his winter quarters, and, having made an appointment with Maldonado to meet him in the fall at Achusee, 1540 marched towards the northeast, since he had March heard of a rich realm in that direction, abounding in gold and pearls. His line of march carried him through Middle and North Georgia, then, by a sudden turn to the southwest, to Maubila, about one hundred and fifty miles north of Pensacola, where he heard from the Indians of Maldonado's arrival at Achusee. From Maubila he marched north-

Q. Where did Soto spend the winter? What did Añasco find at Auté? Give an account of his mission to Espiritu Bay. What bay did Maldonado find? What appointment was he to keep with Soto? Did he keep it? Relate the account given of Soto's wanderings. Where was Soto buried?

westerly to the country beyond the Mississippi, whose waters were the final resting place of the worn-out *conquistador*. His band sailed down the Mississippi, and, after much suffering, reached their friends in Mexico, reduced to about one-fourth their original number.

SOTO'S CRUEL TREATMENT OF THE INDIANS. Though as a rule the early Spanish explorers had no regard for the life or welfare of the natives, yet the excessive cruelty shown by Hernando de Soto in Florida would scarcely have been expected from one who had behaved so gallantly and honorably in the campaign in Peru. He made it a practice to seize the cacique of the province through which he was passing and to compel him to attend the expedition until the territory of the next chief was reached, when he was let go. But it was a rare thing for Soto to let loose the cacique's subjects who were forced to carry the baggage of the Spaniards and to do other menial service, loaded with heavy chains and iron collars. Large numbers died from neglect and harsh treatment, for it was much easier to get new carriers than to care for those who were sick. Soto's line of march was one long line of blood and devastation; and so it was that when Tristan de Luna in after years reached the province of Coça (*Coosa County, Ala.*) which had lain across Soto's track, he found the fields uncultivated and the inhabitants scattered from their homes.

Q. What became of Soto's followers? How did the early Spanish explorers treat the Indians? Give an account of Soto's method of treating them. Why were the sick not cared for? How was Soto's line of march marked? What did Tristan de Luna find at Coça? Tell about the shipwreck in 1545.

NEED OF A SETTLEMENT IN FLORIDA. In 1545 a treasure-ship went ashore on the coast of Florida, and the majority of the two hundred persons who escaped to land were put to death by the Indians, while the remainder became slaves of the savages. Eight years later the Spanish plate-fleet, carrying gold, silver, and other precious commodities, was wrecked on the northern shore of the Gulf of Mexico. It is said that out of the one thousand persons on board the wrecked vessels only three hundred reached the land, and that of these only one man succeeded in getting to Mexico. These disasters showed that it was necessary to have posts on the dangerous coast of Florida to protect life and property.

DOMINICANS IN FLORIDA. In Central America the Dominican Fathers had been very successful in christianizing a district known as the "Land of War", into which no



SOLDIER OF SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

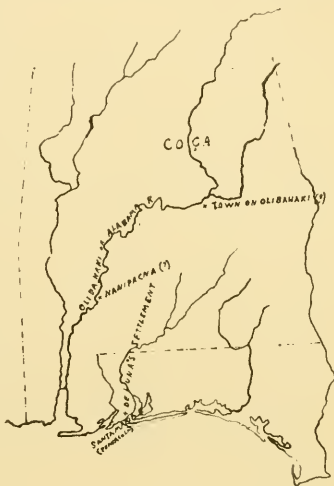
Q. Give an account of the shipwreck on the northern shore of the Gulf in 1553. Tell about the "Land of War". What did the Dominicans attempt to do in 1549?

Spaniard dared enter. So in 1549 four of these fathers sailed from Havana to see if they could not effect a peaceful conquest of Florida. Their vessel put into Espiritu Santo Bay, where two of the missionaries went ashore, and, finding the natives friendly, went with them to their huts; but they were never seen again, for their supposed friends murdered them, as was learned from Juan Munoz, one of Soto's men who had been taken captive by the Indians and made a slave, and who escaped to the missionaries by swimming out to their vessel. The head of the expedition, Fray Luis Caucer de Bastro, did not allow himself to be discouraged, and insisted on going ashore. As he reached the beach, those on board saw him first kneel and then rising walk towards the throng of savages, one of whom took off his cap, while a second felled him to the ground with his club. Thus the first missionary journey to Florida came to a sad end, as the remaining father, deterred by the fate of Caucer, sailed away to Cuba as fast as the wind could carry him.

DON TRISTAN DE LUNA Y ARELLANO. Although every effort to colonize Florida had so far failed, there still remained the necessity of having military posts on its coasts. Besides, the natives ought not to remain heathen, but become Christians. Accordingly, in 1556, the Council of the Indies advised Philip II to entrust the conquest and settlement of Florida to Don Luis de Velasco, the wise and

Q. What happened to two of them? Who was Juan Munoz? Relate the story of Father Caucer's death? What did the other do? Why was it necessary to colonize Florida? What advice did the Council of the Indies give Philip II?

prudent viceroy of Mexico, styled in history the Father of the Indians, because of his unwavering protection of their rights. Two years later Velasco despatched vessels to search out a suitable harbor for his expedition, which was to form a peaceable settlement and cultivate the friendship of the Indians. The commandant of these vessels reported in favor of Pensacola Bay, after an investigation of several months. Command of the expedition was given to Don Tristan de Luna y Arellano, who set sail from Vera Cruz, Mexico, in June, 1559, carrying fifteen hundred soldiers and settlers, several priests and friars eager to convert the Indians, and provisions for a year; and by the first day of July came to anchor in a bay a short distance east of Pensacola Bay, as one account has it, or, according to another account, which is here followed, in Pensacola Bay itself. Vessels were despatched to announce the arrival, one to Mexico,



TRISTAN DE LUNA, 1559-60.

Q. Tell about the preparatory expedition. Describe Tristan de Luna's outfit. Where did he land? What was first done? Give an account of the gale. What did de Luna then do?

another to Spain. Exploring parties were sent out in every direction to ascertain the character of the country. The stores had been partly brought ashore from the ships when, on the 20th of September, a gale destroyed nearly the whole fleet, and drove one caravel with its cargo on land and up into a grove. In consequence of the loss of his provisions Tristan de Luna despatched a company of horsemen to seek the province of Coça (*Coosa County, Ala.*), where some of his men had
1559 been with Hernando de Soto. After a march of forty days they came to Nanipacna, a town on the banks of a river which they could not cross, having travelled the whole way through a barren country. In the meantime the relief supplies received by de Luna from Mexico had been exhausted, and he had decided to remove to Nanipacna with all his colonists except a few who were to remain as a guard at Pensacola Bay, as it had been reported to him that in Nanipacna were supplies of corn, beans, and other vegetables. Accordingly, about one thousand men, women and children marched into the interior and took possession of the Indian village. In a short time they consumed the supply of food provided by the Indians, and were forced to eat acorns, which were boiled to relieve them of their bitterness, and the tender leaves and twigs of trees. When they were very near starvation, Tristan de Luna sent out the sergeant-major to make a further search for Coça. The sergeant-major and his party suffered greatly from hunger,

Q. What town was reached? What had de Luna decided? Why? How many people went to Nanipacna? Tell about the food of these colonists. What expedition was sent out?

seeming unable to capture the game in which the country abounded, until they reached a district where chestnuts and hickory nuts grew, and after a march of fifty days arrived at a town on the Olibahaki (*Alabama River*). Here provisions were plentiful, but their welcome soon wore out, and the Indians adopted a neat scheme to get rid of them. An Indian was dressed up to represent an ambassador from Coça, whose ruler, he informed the Spaniards, was anxious to entertain them; and he led them on the way thither a
1560 distance of one day's journey, when in the darkness of the night he suddenly disappeared. Although they thus lost their guide, the Spaniards pushed forward, and did in the end reach Coça; but much to their disappointment, they found the fields badly cultivated and the inhabitants scattered, a condition of affairs due, as said before, to Hernando de Soto. The sergeant-major was welcomed by the Indians of Coça, and as a return for their kindness aided them in a war against their neighbors. In order to make a report to the general at Nanipacna, he despatched twelve men, who rode rapidly to that village. But these did not find him, for he had concluded that the sergeant-major and his company had been destroyed by the natives, and had moved his colony back to Pensacola Bay, not, however, without leaving a letter buried in a vase at the foot of a tree, upon which was carved "*Dig below*".

Q. Give an account of the sergeant-major's experience on the road. Give an account of the scheme by which the Indians got rid of the Spaniards. How was Coça found to be cultivated? Why? Tell of the sergeant-major's stay. What had become of Tristan de Luna in the meantime? Tell about the letter.

FAILURE OF TRISTAN DE LUNA'S COLONY. Having discovered the letter the twelve men pushed on to Pensacola Bay, where they found a deplorable state of affairs. A large part of the settlers were in revolt, headed by Juan de Ceron, master of the camp, and were insisting on leaving the country as soon as possible. Two friars sailed to Havana, and thence to Mexico to report to Velasco the plight of the colonists and to beg for additional supplies. The news was so unpleasant that the viceroy refused at first to believe them, although he did despatch a vessel with provisions to Pensacola Bay.

The arrival of the twelve messengers made matters worse by their report on the province of
1560 Coça. A secret message was sent by the mutineers to the serjeant-major that the colonists were about to leave; and so he and his company came to Pensacola Bay. Still the dis-
Nov. sension was not healed, though the priests exerted their powers to the utmost. Finally, just as Father Domingo had succeeded during Holy Week in bringing Juan de Ceron and Tristan de Luna together for a peaceable settlement of the difficulty, Angel de Villafañe arrived on his way to Santa Elena, and offered an opportunity to leave the country to all who wished to do so. A council was held, and the vote was almost unanimous for abandoning the colony.

Q. What state of affairs did the messengers find at Pensacola? What was Juan de Ceron doing? Give an account of the two friars. What effect did the arrival of the messengers have? What messenger was sent by the mutineers? How did the priests conduct themselves? What success did Father Domingo have? Give an account of Angel de Villafañe. How did the vote of the council stand?

Tristan de Luna, seeing himself forsaken, set sail for Cuba with five or six servants. After this all the colonists, except fifty or sixty soldiers under Captain Biedma, who were to remain six months longer, embarked on Villafañe's ships and came to Havana, where part left him, the remainder accompanying him to Santa Elena. Nothing was accomplished here, and soon Villafañe sailed to San Domingo. Florida was abandoned.

On the 23rd of September, 1561, Philip II, king of Spain, declared that no further attempts would be made to settle any part of Florida, since there was no danger of a French settlement in that region; and in this opinion he was supported by his most experienced officers.

Q. What did de Luna do? To what place did the colonists go with Villafañe? What declaration did Philip II make?

CHAPTER III.

COMING OF THE FRENCH TO FLORIDA— CHARLES FORT—FORT CAROLINE—ARRIVAL OF MENENDEZ.

FRENCH BEGIN TO COLONIZE FLORIDA. It is curious to note that within a few months after Philip II had declared there was no danger of the French making a settlement in Florida, a colony of Frenchmen was established at what is now Port Royal in South Carolina, then a part of Florida. At this period the Huguenots and Catholics of France were engaged in civil war with each other. The head of the former was the famous Admiral Coligny, who conceived the magnificent idea of founding a Protestant empire where the Huguenots might take refuge, if they should be driven from their native country. The first attempt on the shores of Brazil proved a failure, the second on the coast of Florida succeeded no better, as the story of Charles Fort will show.

CHARLES FORT. In February, 1562, Jean Ribaut sailed from France with two vessels and reached the coast of Florida near the site of St. Augustine. Not landing, he ran northward along the coast
1562
Feb. to the mouth of a river (*St. Johns*), which he named *May*, because he found it on the first day of May.* Here he erected a stone pillar

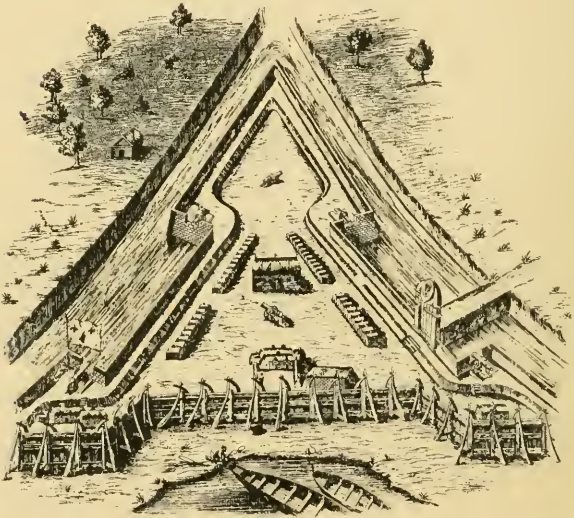
*The native name of the St. Johns River was Walaka, the river of many lakes. Rivière de Mai (*River of May*) was the name given it by the French; the Spaniards called it Rio Mateo (*River Matthew*), or Rio Picolato (*River Picolato*), and at a later time Rio San Juan (*River St. John*), which the English changed to St. Johns, and St. Whan (=Juan, *hoo-an*).

engraved with the arms of France, as a sign that Florida was claimed as a possession of the French king. From the St. Johns Ribaut sailed about ninety leagues to the north, to the harbor of Port Royal, S. C., where he persuaded a number of his men to remain as the beginning of a settlement which should grow into an empire. A small fort was built and named Charles Fort, in honor of the king of France, Charles IX. Leaving Captain Albert and twenty-five soldiers at Charles Fort, Jean Ribaut departed for France, expecting to return in a short time; but on his arrival in that country he found the civil war raging, which prevented him from returning to Charles Fort, and its very existence was almost forgotten.

At Charles Fort everything went gaily, until provisions began to grow scarce, and no sail appeared bringing promised relief. Mutiny then broke out; Captain Albert was murdered; and, despairing of aid from France, the survivors of the original twenty-five built a boat in which they expected to cross the Atlantic, the craziest craft, perhaps, that ever sailed that ocean. It had been built by men ignorant of the art of carpentry, had been caulked with moss, and was propelled by sails made of shirts. Their provisions gave out in mid-ocean, and one man had already been killed and eaten, when the remainder were rescued by an English vessel and carried to London.

Q. What curious coincidence is mentioned? What was the condition of affairs in France at this time? Tell about Admiral Coligny's scheme. What success had his first colony met with? What expedition sailed from France in 1562? Give an account of Jean Ribaut at the mouth of the St. Johns River.

FORT CAROLINE. Quiet was restored in France in 1563, and during the next year Admiral Coligny turned his attention again to the establishment of a Huguenot colony in Florida. The commandant of this new expedition was René de Laudonnière, a small, wiry Frenchman, a



FORT CAROLINE. *De Bry, 1591.*

Q. Give the different names of the St. Johns River (*see Note*). Where did Ribaut expect to form a settlement? Give the name of the fort built by him. How many men did he leave at Charles Fort? Why did he not return? What was the state of affairs at Charles Fort? Tell about the mutiny and the boat built by the Frenchmen. What can you say of the voyage?

companion of Ribaut on his voyage in 1562, and a brave and pious knight. Laudonnière sailed Apr. 22 from Havre on the 22nd of April, 1564, with three ships of sixty, one hundred, and one hundred and twenty tons burden, respectively, which carried a larger and better equipped company than had gone to Charles Fort. But he made a grave mistake in taking too many soldiers and gentlemen and too few mechanics and farmers, in consequence of which the naturally rich soil of Florida was left uncultivated and the colony came near perishing from June 22 starvation. A run of just two months brought the ships to the mouth of the harbor of St. Augustine, which the Frenchmen named the River of Dolphins. Here Laudonnière went ashore and was most hospitably received by the natives, who wished him to spend the night with them; June 23 but he deemed it more prudent to return to his ship. On the next day, he proceeded to the St. Johns River, or River May, where he saw the pillar set up by Jean Ribaut. Some time was spent in exploring various localities to select a site suitable for the erection of a fort, and the position finally chosen seems to have been at St. Johns Bluff, on the southern side of the St. Johns River, a few miles from its mouth; but the exact location will never be known, as the fort was constructed out of sand and logs. Among the colonists was a painter, who has left us a

Q. When did Coligny turn his attention again to Florida? Give some account of Laudonnière. Describe his ships and colonists. What mistake did he make? Where did he first land? How was he received by the Indians? What did he see at the mouth of the St. Johns? Tell about the site of the fort. How is it represented in an old picture?

picture of the fort, a triangular structure; but he represents it as being on an island in the midst of
1564 a river. This fort, like Charles Fort, was named in honor of Charles IX, being called Fort Caroline.

ILL MANAGEMENT OF THE COLONY. All the early colonists who came to America were more eager to seek for gold and silver than to cultivate the soil; and the Frenchmen at Fort Caroline were no exception to the rule, especially as they had seen pieces of gold among the natives. At first they were able to make the very profitable exchange of a hatchet for two pounds of gold; but their greed getting the better of them, they began to take the metal from the Indians, who in a short time refused to let it be known that they had any gold. Much time was consumed in exploring the country in the hope of finding wealth, and in consequence no crop was planted, so that by the spring of 1565 starvation stared the Frenchmen in the face. Although the St. Johns River "boiled and roared" with all kinds of fish, the young gentlemen and the soldiers would not condescend to catch them for themselves. And it is said that the Indians would take fish before the very eyes of the white man and then sell them to him at a high price. Moreover, when the fish-traps, which the natives had kindly made for the Frenchmen, were taken away during a war, they were too lazy to make others.

MUTINY. A conspiracy against Laudonnière was started in September, 1564, but part of the conspira-

Q. What was the name of the new fort? What were the early colonists eager for? What made the Frenchmen especially eager to hunt for gold?

tors were sent back to France. Subsequently he
Sept. fell sick, and during his sickness he was
bound and confined for fifteen days on board
one of the vessels. The mutineers then seized two
small boats built for the purpose of exploration, and
ran away to the West Indies on a freebooting expedi-
tion. One of the boats was compelled to re-
1564 turn, whereupon four of the leaders were
tried by court-martial and hung. The other
boat met with better success at first; but its crew was
captured by the Spaniards at Jamaica, and some of
them were hanged, others sent to Spain.

THE FRENCH AND THE INDIANS. The Spaniards
were in the early times very harsh in their treatment
of the Indians, although later they became gentler.
The Frenchmen, on the contrary, made friends with
the natives from the outset, and when they left Florida
"no fierce imprecation or profane expletive lingered in
the recollection of the red men as a synonym for a
French Protestant." Baskets of maize and grapes
were brought as presents to Fort Caroline; and an In-
dian queen, whose home seems to have been on the St.
Mary's River, sent back Laudonnière's boats loaded
with beans and acorns and cassava. The artist men-
tioned before drew a picture of this queen in a state
procession. In front appear two trumpeters marching
before her majesty, who sits on a covered platform
carried by six chiefs, while two walk by her side hold-
ing large feather fans; next after the queen come beau-

Q. Give an account of their dealings with the Indians.
In what condition were they by the spring of 1565? Why?
Tell about their catching of fish. Give an account of the con-
spiracy and mutiny.

tiful girls with baskets of fruits and flowers, and then the warriors and guards. At first the colonists had been neutral in the wars of the natives, taking the part of neither side; but at last they were compelled to serve some of the chiefs in order by this means to procure a supply of provisions. During the summer of 1565 hunger pressed them so hard that, as it had become difficult to obtain food by purchase from the 1565 Indians, they marched forth from their fort and took by force part of the crops in the nearest fields. But in spite of this, the red man regretted the departure of the Frenchmen.

ARRIVAL OF SIR JOHN HAWKINS AT FORT CAROLINE. It was confidently expected that supplies would arrive from France by April, 1565; but April April came and passed and still no vessel appeared.

In their despair the colonists had resolved to repair their vessels and to leave the country, when, at the height of their distress, ships were seen Aug. in the offing. They proved to be the ships of Sir John Hawkins, Queen Elizabeth's doughty sea-king, who was returning from a cruise after Spanish treasure-ships, and was quite ready to aid Spain's enemies at Fort Caroline. He had been searching along the coast for fresh water, and had been brought to the colony by one of the Frenchmen who had run away and was now on board one of the

Q. Relate the fate of the two boats. Contrast the Spanish and the French treatment of the Indians. What presents were brought to Fort Caroline? What picture has been left behind by the artist? What was the French attitude towards the wars of the natives? What were the French finally forced to do?

English ships. Laudonnière says that he received of the general, meaning Sir John Hawkins, as many courtesies as it was possible to receive of any man living. He sold the French commander twenty barrels of meal, six pipes of beans, one hogshead of salt, and a hundred of wax to make candles, taking a promissory note as payment; and gave him various articles for his private use. But more than this, he offered to carry a portion of Laudonnière's men across the Atlantic and set them on French soil. This offer, however, was not accepted, for Laudonnière did not know if the French and English might not be at war with each other, and this be a ruse to take his men prisoners. But he did buy a small brigantine, paying for it with the artillery at the fort, which otherwise would have been left behind, as he could not carry it on his ships.

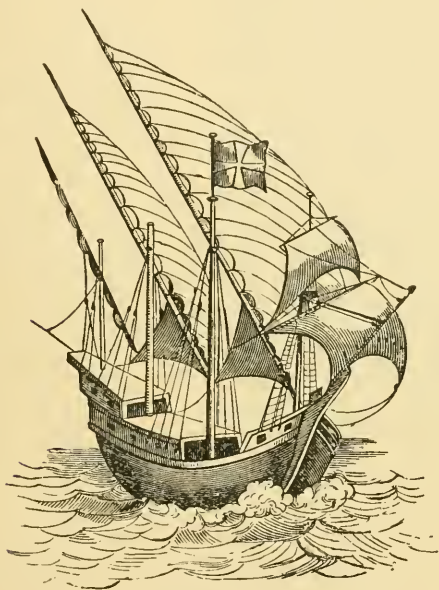
EARLY OPINIONS OF FLORIDA. The Frenchman had an eye for the beauties of the landscape, and his poetic nature was kindled by the rivers and lakes and forests teeming with animal life; but the English sailor wondered how it was that in a rich country like that around Fort Caroline any one could suffer from hunger. Grapes grew wild; roots of various kinds were to be found; maize throve readily and required very little cultivation, and meat could be easily obtained from deer and "divers other beasts and fowl serviceable to the use of man." Besides, there was a wonder-

Q. How did the natives feel towards the French after their departure? By what time were supplies expected? Relate the arrival of Sir John Hawkins. How did he treat the French? What did he let them have? Give an account of his offer and Laudonnière's refusal. Why did Laudonnière pay for the brigantine with his artillery?

ful weed employed by the Floridians in their journeys, "who with a cane, and earthen cup in the end with fire and the dried herbs put together, doe suck throw a cane the smoke thereof, which smoke satisfieth their hunger, and therewith they live four or five days without meate or drinke; and this all the Frenchmen used for this purpose," although it made them sick, as tobacco still does beginners. However, it has lost the wonderful property of keeping "us from hunger three or four days at a time." Lions and tigers were supposed to inhabit the forests, and whales were caught in the ocean by natives, who would swim out to the sleeping monster, climb on his head, and drive into one of his blow-holes one of the two pieces of wood the swimmer had brought along. This would wake the whale, which would dive under the water, carrying the Indian holding fast to the piece of wood in the blow-hole; but the whale would soon have to come to the surface for fresh air, when the fisherman at once thrust his second piece into the other blow-hole. By 1565 this means both nostrils of the fish were closed, causing it to suffocate. After it had ceased its death-struggles, the natives came out in their boats and towed the carcass ashore. Wonderful tales did the Frenchmen and Englishmen hear; but the former viewed them with a poetic fancy, while the latter thought of the trade his country could build up in this distant country.

Q. How did the Frenchman view Florida? What did the Englishman think? Give the things that could easily be obtained for food. Tell the tale about tobacco. What savage beasts were supposed to dwell in the forests? Give the story the Englishman heard about whales.

ARRIVAL OF RIBAUT AND MENENDEZ. Sir John Hawkins had scarcely left Fort Caroline when Jean Ribaut arrived, August 29, the very day Laudonnière expected to sail for France. Admiral Coligny had never forgotten his colony, although hindered by the civil war from sending aid



FRENCH CARAVEL OF 16TH CENTURY.

earlier, and had now despatched Captain Ribaut with five hundred men and several families of artisans in seven vessels, four of which must have been of large

Q. What was the English view of Florida? When did Ribaut arrive? Why had not aid been sent before?

size, as they were unable to pass the bar at the mouth of the St. Johns River. The voyage from Dieppe, France, was a very long one, it being three months from the time Ribaut sailed till he reached the Florida coast somewhere below St. Augustine. Here he learned from a shipwrecked Spaniard living among the Indians that Laudonnière's colony was situated fifty leagues northward, and, accordingly, coasting in that direction, he arrived at Fort Caroline, as related. The four larger vessels were unable to enter the St. Johns River, and were left outside with only a few sailors on board as a guard.

By some means the Spanish court had found out that a French colony had been planted on the coast of Florida, in a country claimed by them through the rights of discovery and given them by the
1565 Pope. And to make matters worse, the colonists were Huguenots, who were detestable above all other peoples in the eyes of Catholic Spain. At this juncture Philip II found a man after his own heart, Pedro Menendez de Avilès, "an admirable soldier and matchless liar, brave as a mastiff and savage as a wolf." He had lost a son by shipwreck somewhere on the coast of Florida and was anxious to seek for him, as he believed him to be living and captive among the Indians. To the king he represented the glory of Christianizing the Indians and the need of better knowledge of the shores, harbors, and currents,

Q. Describe Ribaut's expedition. Where did he reach the coast of Florida? What did he learn here? From whom? How were four vessels left? What did the Spanish court find out? What caused the Spaniards to be especially angry? Give the character of Menendez. Why was he anxious to go to Florida? What reasons did he give the king for going?

which had destroyed so many richly-laden ships of Spain. Although Florida had proved the ruin of every expedition that had come to her shores, yet more men answered Menendez's call for colonists than the ships could carry. The king gave him the title of *adelantado* and marquis, the office of governor and captain-general of Florida, the use of one caravel, and a personal grant of land twenty-five leagues square. Menendez had himself to bear the expense of transporting the colonists, of provisioning them and also several hundred soldiers, of maintaining sixteen members of religious orders, and of providing horses, cattle, sheep, and swine for the two or three permanent settlements he was to found. He was also to carry five hundred slaves, but it is doubtful whether they were actually taken. Preparations were being hurried forward for a large expedition, when Philip suddenly summoned Menendez to



PEDRO MENENDEZ DE AVILES.

Q. How many answered Menendez's call? What did the king give him? What did he have to furnish? Tell about the slaves to be carried? Why was he suddenly summoned to court?

court. News had just reached him about the colony
at Fort Caroliné, and of Ribaut's prepara-
1565 tions for enlarging it. Now began a race, as
it were, to see who should reach Florida first,
June 29 Ribaut or Menendez. The former had been
on his way some two months before Menen-
dez set sail from Cadiz, June 29, with fifteen hundred
persons, including mechanics and farmers, in nineteen
vessels all told, about two thirds of the force he had in-
tended to carry.

After leaving the Canary Islands, the fleet was scat-
tered in every direction by a storm, but several vessels
arrived at Porto Rico by the 9th of August.
Aug. 9 Here Menendez made a few repairs, and then
hastened on his journey without waiting for
the remainder of his force, for it was necessary to sur-
prise Fort Caroline before the reinforcements under
Ribaut should reach it and put it in a condi-
Aug. 25 tion to resist an attack. On the 25th of Au-
gust he made the coast of Florida about Cape
Aug. 28 Cañaveral, where he learned the part of the
country occupied by the French. Coasting
northward, on the 28th he discovered a harbor, to
which he gave the name of St. Augustine, after the
saint who is honored on that day; and still running
north, on the 4th of September sighted the four vessels
of Ribaut lying at anchor before the mouth of the St.
Johns River.

Q. What race now began? When did Menendez sail?
Give his outfit. What happened on the voyage? Why did
he hasten from Porto Rico? Give an account of his arrival
at Florida. Why was St. Augustine so named?

The fight was to be one without quarter. Menendez had set out in an ugly spirit; he was in his own eyes a crusader; and of all conflicts, the deadliest are those waged in the name of religion, as the Protestants of France knew to their cost.

Q. Why was the fight between the Frenchmen and Spaniards to be merciless?

CHAPTER IV.

FOUNDING OF ST. AUGUSTINE—DESTRUCTION OF FORT CAROLINE—SLAUGHTER OF RIBAUT AND HIS MEN.

SKIRMISH AT THE MOUTH OF THE ST. JOHNS. A council of war was now held on board the Spanish ships, and Menendez's officers were in favor of putting back to San Domingo and waiting 1565 Sept. 4 for reinforcements; but he himself urged a speedy attack, which was finally resolved on. Immediate action was prevented by a thunderstorm, and it was not until ten at night that Menendez was able to run his own ship between the two larger French vessels and demand who they were and why they were on this coast. When he found out who they were, he told them that he intended to board their ships in the morning and hang the French Lutherans found there. "Because," he says, "I could not avoid executing on them the justice which his majesty commanded." The Frenchmen replied that he might go without waiting for the morning. As Menendez was manoeuvring for a favorable position, Ribaut's vessels slipped their cables and stood out to sea, hotly pursued by the Spaniards, who fired five cannon at the French flagship without doing it any injury. By their superior sailing qualities the French soon escaped beyond

Q. Give the opinions of Menendez and his officers as to attacking the French. What did Menendez do with his vessel? Relate what he told the Frenchmen. Give their reply.

cannon-shot. Seeing that he could not overtake them, Menendez returned with the intention of fortifying a position at the mouth of the St. Johns, by means of



ST. AUGUSTINE BEFORE 1671. FROM MONTANUS.

which he could command the entrance to the river and
blockade Fort Caroline. But as he neared
1565 the coast, the remaining French vessels were
seen coming out, and deeming it more pru-

Q. Give an account of the flight of Ribaut's ships. What did Menendez intend to fortify?

dent to retire, he bore away for the harbor of St. Augustine, a French vessel hovering on his rear to report his further movements.

FOUNDING OF ST. AUGUSTINE. On the 6th of September two hundred and fifty Spanish soldiers under two captains were landed, and began at once Sept. 6 to throw up intrenchments around the dwelling of an Indian cacique who had given it as a present to the strangers. Three hundred more soldiers and settlers, men, women and children, were disembarked on the 7th. The next day was a religious holiday, and Mass was said for the first time on the spot where the shrine of Our Lady of the Milk afterwards arose. Having landed the provisions and munitions of war, Menendez prepared to go ashore himself, and, amid the thunder of cannon and strains of martial music, was rowed from the side of his vessel to the beach, where on bended knee he kissed the cross presented him by Mendoza Grajales, the first priest of St. Augustine. After this he took possession of the country for his king, and received an oath of loyalty from his officers and men, surrounded by a crowd of spectators, colonists and friendly Indians. His own galleon, being too large to enter the harbor, was despatched to San Domingo; two smaller vessels hurried down to Havana after horses for a cavalry company; at the harbor everything was working to

Q. How was he hindered? Where did he sail? Give an account of the operations at St. Augustine, September 6 and 7. What was done on the 8th? Tell about Menendez's landing. Give his further actions at this time. Why was his own galleon sent to San Domingo? Why did two vessels go to Havana?

make the position as strong as possible against an attack from the fort to the north. St. Augustine had begun, the oldest city in the United States.

RIBAUT SETS OUT TO ATTACK MENENDEZ. On two occasions while the colony was being landed at St. Augustine, French vessels sailed up to the mouth of the harbor, without doing, however, any injury at all. But on the 10th the whole fleet bore down; for Ribaut had embarked all his force, leaving only a few sick soldiers and Laudonnière with the women and children at Fort Caroline. He was eager to take the Spaniards by surprise before their fortifications were completed. But a grievous delay of two days ruined his plans and brought destruction on his settlement. If he had sailed on the 8th he would have escaped the hurricane, which on the 10th caught his vessels and drove them far down the coast, where each and every one went ashore.

MENENDEZ MARCHES AGAINST FORT CAROLINE. The storm raged so long and fiercely that it was morally certain that the French ships had not been able to regain Fort Caroline. So Menendez determined to retaliate by marching overland and falling on the enemy's fort while its garrison was weakened and not expecting an attack during the tempest. His officers

Q. Why did the Spaniards hurry? What is the age of St. Augustine? What did the French ships do while the Spaniards were landing? How much of his entire force did Ribaut carry with him? What proved his ruin? What became of his vessels? Why did Menendez wish to make his attack during the storm? How was it regarded at St. Augustine?

and the clergymen at St. Augustine pronounced the undertaking rash, but Menendez was obstinate, and on the 17th began his march in the midst of a pouring rain. Across marshes and swollen creeks, through tall grass and tangled underbrush, for three times twenty-four hours, he fought his way, hatchet in hand, until on the morning of the 20th his wolfish band swept down the slope before Fort Caroline. The march had been a difficult one, and of the five hundred who had started with Menendez, many had fallen behind and made their way back to St. Augustine.

“NOT AS TO FRENCHMEN, BUT AS TO LUTHERANS.” Laudonnière had made some attempts to put the fort in some state of defense; but he was himself very ill, and he had only sixteen well men in the place, so that little was done. Moreover, the night of the 19th was very stormy, and the sentinels were under cover, as no one expected an attack. At dawn of the next morning the maddened Spaniards rushed to the assault; killed the first sentinel who met them; planted their ladders against the walls; seized one of the gates thrown open through mistake by some one within wishing to know the cause of the alarm outside; and Fort Caroline was taken. Man, woman, and child were massacred without distinction of age or condition, until Menendez gave orders that the aged, the feeble, the cripple, and those under fifteen years of age,

Q. Describe the march. How many soldiers did Menendez have? In what state of defense was Fort Caroline? What kind of a night was that of the 19th? Describe the capture. Give an account of the massacre. What does Menendez say in his letter to the king?

should be spared. In his letter to the king he states that one hundred and thirty-two persons were put to death, and excuses himself for having spared the others. There is a story that some of the prisoners were taken outside the fort to a body of trees and there hung, with this inscription over them: "*Not as to Frenchmen, but as to Lutherans.*" Much booty fell into the hands of the Spaniards: three vessels with all on board, the fort and its guns, supplies of flour and bread, horses, sheep, and hogs.

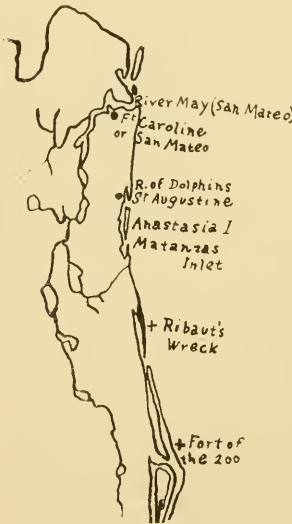
ESCAPE OF LAUDONNIERE AND FIFTY OTHERS.
The French commander tried to rally his men, fighting

1565 bravely himself, until he saw that the fort was taken and himself recognized, when he escaped through a breach in the walls of the fort to the woods, where he fell in with several of his men. Two vessels lay at the mouth of the St. Johns on the lookout for an attack by sea, and he and a number of his companions made their way to these through the mud and the streams along the bank of the river. Among those who escaped in this way was Ribaut's son. Others hid themselves in the forests, living among the Indians, until one by one they were picked up by passing vessels, and thus reached their native country.

SAN MATEO. As the day after the capture was sacred to St. Matthew (*San Mateo*), Menendez changed the name of the fort from Caroline to San Mateo in

Q. Tell about the inscription over those who were hung. What booty was obtained by the Spaniards? How did Laudonnière conduct himself? Give an account of Laudonnière's escape. Who was among those who escaped to the ships? How did others escape? To what did Menendez change the names of Fort Caroline and the River May? Why?

honor of that apostle, whose name was also bestowed on the St. Johns River in the place of *May*. Menendez ordered a church to be built at once out of the material collected by Laudonnière for building vessels. Three hundred men were left as a garrison, and the rest were to return to St. Augustine; but only thirty-five were willing to undergo the hardships of the march. At the Spanish colony there was great rejoicing on Menendez's arrival, and a *Te Deum* was sung in celebration of the victory. San Mateo took fire a few days after its capture, and much of its contents were destroyed; but in a short time Menendez



OPERATIONS OF FRENCH AND SPANISH.

restored it stronger than ever, and erected fortifications near the mouth of the river for further security.

RIBAUT'S SHIPWRECK; FIRST MASSACRE OF THE FRENCH. As related before, a storm drove Ribaut's ships far down the coast, where they all went ashore on the soft sand somewhere between Mosquito and Matanzas Inlets. Every one, officers and men, succeeded in escaping to land from the stranded vessels, with the exception of a certain Captain

Q. What did he order built? What was done with his men? How was the news received at St. Augustine? Give a further account of San Mateo. What had become of Ribaut's vessels?

La Grange, who had opposed the expedition and had consented to go only at the last moment. They now formed themselves into two bodies, and began to work their way along the coast in the direction of their fort. By the 28th of September the first company of over two hundred men arrived at Matanzas Inlet, where they halted, since they had no means of crossing. Soon on the other side Menendez was seen with a small band of seventy soldiers, who were, however, so skilfully disposed as to appear like a numerous army. Menendez had received intelligence through friendly Indians of the Frenchmen on the day of their arrival at Matanzas Inlet, and had at once hurried off in time to have his men arranged as related by the morning of the 29th. One of the shipwrecked men, a sailor, swam over to the Spaniards, to carry back a boat in which four or five officers crossed. They requested of Menendez that he should give them a means of passing the inlet, in order that they might reach their friends at Fort Caroline; but on learning of the destruction of the fort, they asked for vessels to convey them to France, as their countries were friendly and at peace with each other. Menendez replied by asking if they were Catholics or Lutherans. When told that they were Lutherans, he declared that if they had been Catholics he would have favored them, but, as they were Lutherans, he would

Q. Give the loss by the shipwreck. What did the Frenchmen now do? Where did the first company halt? How did Menendez arrange his men? How did he learn that the French were at Matanzas Inlet? Who came over to him? Give the requests of the officers. How did Menendez reply? What did he further say?

wage war on them with fire and sword. However, he said they could surrender and yield to his
1565 mercy, "in order that he might do to them what should be directed him by the grace of God." Some of the Frenchmen were wealthy and of noble birth. These offered as a ransom for their lives the sum of fifty thousand ducats, but the Spaniard was obdurate; and finally his terms were accepted, for with starvation and death at the hands of savages staring them in the face it was deemed preferable to trust to his mercy.

Boats were now sent over and the Frenchmen brought across in companies of ten, each company guarded by twenty Spaniards. As a band arrived it was disarmed and marched behind a low hill, where the hands of every man were tied behind his back, until the whole two hundred and eight were thus secured. Eight only were let loose, who claimed that they were Catholics. By this time the day was well spent, and as the sun went down two hundred French Lutherans, who had allowed themselves to be bound, expecting to be carried to St. Augustine as prisoners, were murdered in cold blood. Not a man of them remained to tell the tale.

RIBAUT REACHES MATANZAS INLET: SECOND MASSACRE. Menendez had scarcely reached St. Augustine when he was informed that another and large company

Q. How did some of the Frenchmen endeavor to escape death? Why were the Spaniards' terms accepted? Describe the bringing over of the French. Why were eight released? Tell what is said about the murder. What further information was given Menendez? What did he find at Matanzas Inlet? What was done? What was told the officer?

of men was at Matanzas Inlet. Hurrying back with one hundred and fifty soldiers, he found Ribaut and three hundred and fifty of his followers drawn up in battle array on the opposite side of the inlet, and endeavoring to construct a raft on which they might cross. Again as in the first instance, a sailor swam over and carried back a canoe in which an officer was brought across, who was informed of the fate of Fort

1565 Caroline and shown the stark bodies of his murdered comrades. After this Ribaut himself came over; was feasted most sumptuously; but could obtain no better terms than surrender to the mercy of the Spaniard, although he offered for himself and part of his men a ransom of one hundred and fifty thousand ducats, the rest preferring to treat for themselves. When these hard terms became known to the soldiers across the inlet, two hundred of them declared they would rather face death in a thousand ways than trust to the mercy of a monster like Menendez. During the night they contrived to slip away into the forest.

The next morning Ribaut and one hundred and fifty of his men were ferried over in companies of ten, their arms were taken away from them and their hands tied behind their backs, as on the former occasion. When this work was completed, all but five of the whole one hundred and fifty were coolly murdered, as if pigs were being slaughtered. One man's wounds

Q. How was Ribaut treated? What ransom did he offer? Give an account of two hundred of the soldiers. Narrate the story of the remaining one hundred and fifty. Tell about the escape of one man. What is Ribaut said to have done? What is the meaning of Matanzas?

were not fatal, and he crawled off to the woods during the night, was kindly treated by the Indians, and in the end reached France, where he wrote an account of the massacre, which is now in existence. As Ribaut was bound he sang one of the psalms, and, this ended, said in a calm voice: "We are of earth, and to the earth we must return; twenty years more or less is all but as a tale that is told."

Thus on these two occasions perished many brave men, most cruelly murdered; and well does the inlet bear the name Matanzas—Slaughtering.

THE FATE OF THE TWO HUNDRED. The two hundred who refused to surrender with Ribaut retreated down the coast to a point near Cape Cañaveral, where they built a fort and began to construct vessels to escape to their own country. About 1565 the twentieth day after the second massacre information of their proceedings was brought to St. Augustine, and after some delay Menendez set out along the shore with one hundred and fifty men, to attack the French, one hundred more following in three vessels. On his arrival at the French Nov. 8 fort, about November 8, the inmates fled to the woods, but on his assurance that their lives would be spared, one hundred and fifty came in and surrendered. On this occasion Menendez kept his word. A part of these were incorporated into the Spanish colony, and others eventually returned to France; but of the fate of those who remained in the forest nothing is known. Menendez destroyed the fort and vessels and sailed to Havana, leaving one of his captains to build Fort Santa Lucia de Cañaveral in a more favorable spot.

MENENDEZ RECEIVES PRAISE FROM PHILIP II AND THE POPE. Menendez's master, Philip II, was much pleased at the destruction of the Huguenot colony and commended him for his zeal and piety. It used to be said in the days of Philip that if a really first-class job of murder turned up in any country whatsoever, his hand was sure to be in it. At Rome the Pope was so gratified that he wrote a letter thanking Menendez, in which, after expressing his joy, he gives some very good advice concerning the treatment and conversion of the Indians.

Q. What became of the two hundred who refused to surrender? Give an account of Menendez's expedition against them. What did they do on his arrival? How did Menendez treat those who surrendered? What became of them and of those who remained in the forest? What did Menendez then do? How was Menendez's act received by Philip? by the Pope? What used to be said of Philip?

CHAPTER V.

MUTINY—ACTIVITY OF MENENDEZ—HIS VISIT TO SPAIN—NOTABLE REVENGE OF DOMINIC DE GOURGUES—RETURN OF MENENDEZ—HIS DEATH—SIR FRANCIS DRAKE AT ST. AUGUSTINE.

MUTINY. As stated before, Menendez sailed from Cape Cañaveral to Havana; and in these parts he spent the winter of 1565-6, hunting for corsairs and seeking after his lost son. The winter found the Spanish colonists unprepared, which added to the disaffection which had already sprung up among them. At St. Augustine and San Mateo the garrisons mutinied, and that of the latter place, with the exception of twenty-one men, seized a vessel that had arrived with provisions and set out for the West Indies. The garrison of St. Augustine was preparing to depart, when Menendez returned and endeavored to persuade the men to remain, but in this he was unsuccessful. He was compelled to allow one hundred under Captain Vincente to return to Porto Rico in a small vessel, in which many of them died from overcrowding before reaching their destination.

HOSTILITY OF THE INDIANS. A great source of suffering during this same winter was the hostility of

Q. How did Menendez spend the winter? How did the winter find the colonists? Tell about the garrison of San Mateo. Give an account of the mutineers at St. Augustine. What was a great source of suffering during the winter?

the Indians, who were incited by French fugitives to attack the Spaniards at San Mateo and St. Augustine, so that in a short time it became dangerous for any one to venture beyond the walls of the forts. On one occasion the Indians surrounded the fort at St. Augustine, sending in a shower of arrows, some of which carried fire and soon had one of the storehouses blazing; and do what they might, the Spaniards were unable to put out the flames before the entire building was consumed.

MENENDEZ HUNTS FOR CORSAIRS AND SEARCHES FOR HIS SON. The Spanish *adelantado* found some of his ships at Havana, with which he set sail to attack the French and English corsairs cruising around San Domingo; but hearing that the king had sent him reinforcements, he turned back. In the meantime, while waiting for the reinforcements, he sent to Campeachy for assistance which was denied him in Cuba; and in February, 1566, he explored the Tortugas and the southern coast of Florida, seeking for the son for whose sake he had in the first place wished to come to Florida. His son could not be found; but friendly relations were established with the cacique Carlos, and several Spanish prisoners were rescued, one of whom Carlos was accustomed to sacrifice every year. This Indian chief of South Florida had heard that Carlos was the name of the most powerful ruler in the whole world, the Em-

Q. Who incited the Indians to hostility? How far was this hostility carried? Give an account of the burning of the storehouse. Tell about Menendez's hunt for corsairs. What explorations did he make during February? What prisoners were rescued? Why was the Indian chief named Carlos?

peror Charles V, and had adopted it as his own name. In March Menendez returned to St. Augustine.

ST. AUGUSTINE. According to one narrative, this was the time at which Menendez built the log fort which was destroyed twenty years later by 1566 Sir Francis Drake. The position of St. Augustine was an excellent one, owing to the harbor, which allowed the smaller vessels bringing provisions to enter, but kept out the larger warships of an attacking enemy; and in addition to this the surrounding region was healthy. Before the arrival of the Spaniards there had been an Indian village on this spot, called Seloy, and the newcomers made use of some of the native dwellings. The fort, which was in reality begun just after the destruction of Fort Caroline, was an octagonal structure made of logs, and was situated near the site of the present fort. Other buildings were erected, among these a hall of justice, and very probably a church, as Menendez never forgot that he was to advance the cause of religion in the New World.

ACTIVITY OF MENENDEZ. After the governor was rid of the discontented members of his colony, he sailed up the coast to San Mateo, and from there to Guale, or Amelia Island, where the natives were converted in a body, but only after Menendez had explained to them how it was that the Spaniards could kill other Christians. "The other white people," he

Q. What was built at this time at St. Augustine? Why was the position of St. Augustine an excellent one? What occupied the spot before the arrival of the Spaniards? Give an account of the fort. What other buildings were erected? Tell about the conversion of the Indians at Guale.

said, "were bad Christians, and believers in lies; they had fled their own country, and came to mislead the caciques and other Indians"; and for this reason they "deserved the most cruel death". A fort was also built at St. Helena (*Port Royal, S. C.*), but most of its garrison soon deserted. During 1566 an ex-

1566 pedition under Juan Pardo marched from St. Helena to the gold region of North Georgia.

Menendez on his return sailed far up the San Mateo River (*St. Johns River*). Later a vessel, by his orders, explored this same stream in the endeavor to meet him, if possible, on the southern coast of 1566-7 Florida, where he was building a small fort in the kingdom of Carlos; but it did not proceed far owing to the hostile Indians who lined both banks.

Much trouble was all along experienced from the natives. They became, however, to some extent pacified, with the exception of one Saturiba, a powerful cacique and a match for the Spaniard in duplicity. Finally, troops marched against him; but, as was the case with the modern Seminole in that same country, he was not found when wanted.

MENENDEZ VISITS SPAIN. In the spring of 1567 it became necessary for the *adelantado* to make a visit to Spain in the interest of his colony, since the 1567 evil reports of the deserters concerning his management of affairs had reached the court.

Q. What fort was built? Where did Juan Pardo march? Tell about the voyages on the San Mateo. How were the Indians disposed toward the Spaniards? Tell about Saturiba and the attack on him. Why did Menendez have to return to Spain? How was the voyage made?

The voyage was made in a small vessel of twenty tons, built at St. Augustine, and only seventeen days are said to have been required for the run to the Azores. He was received with much favor at court; but he could obtain no aid such as was necessary to put his settlements in condition to resist the attack which he expected from the French in retaliation for Matanzas and Fort Caroline. Indeed, there was already a rumor that an expedition for Florida was fitting out in some French port.

DOMINIC DE GOURGUES. When news of the massacre at Fort Caroline and Matanzas reached France, a storm of indignation rose among the people, and a memorial was sent up to the throne signed by the widows and orphans of the unfortunate colonists. But the Catholic court was indifferent to the sufferings of its Huguenot subjects, and nothing was done. An avenger was to arise in the person of a private individual, one Dominic de Gourgues, a man of noble birth, and, perhaps, himself a Catholic. Like most men of gentle birth in those days, he made arms his profession, and rose to the rank of captain, at that time a high honor; but he was unfortunate enough to fall into the hands of the Spaniards, who set him to work in a galley. As fate willed it, this galley was captured by the Turks, who again lost it to the French, and in this way de Gourgues returned to his native country, smarting under his injuries. When it became

Q. Give an account of his reception at court. What rumor was there at this time? Relate what was done in France on the arrival of the news concerning the massacre at Fort Caroline and Matanzas. Who was to avenge the murder at Fort Caroline and Matanzas? Give an account of Dominic de Gourgues' life.

evident that the court of France would do nothing to exact vengeance for its subjects murdered in Florida, he determined to take the task upon himself. Secrecy was necessary, for the court would very likely report his undertaking to the king of Spain; and so he gave it out that he was preparing to go on a slave-hunt on the western coast of Africa. Accordingly, three vessels were fitted out, partly at his own expense, partly at the expense of his friends, and on the 22nd 1567 of August, 1567, with one hundred men and Aug. 22 eighty-four mariners, he set sail from Bordeaux, bound for the slave coast, where the remainder of the year was spent, and a cargo of negroes was captured.

ARRIVAL IN FLORIDA: INDIAN ALLIES. De Gourgues now turned westward, and after a speedy voyage reached San Domingo, where he sold the negroes to the Spaniards, repaired his vessels, and procured a pilot for the Florida coast. Just after leaving San Domingo, it is said, he for the first time made known to his men his intention of punishing the Spaniards for the insult offered his country by the murder of her 1568 subjects, and asked for their assistance in an attack on Fort San Mateo. Not a man was there whose heart did not burn at the story of his countrymen's wrongs, and who did not declare his eagerness to begin the work of revenge. In a short time the mouth of the St. Johns was reached; but de

Q. Why did he determine to take vengeance on the Spaniards? What did he give out as the object of his voyage? Tell about his expedition to the coast of Africa. What did he do at San Domingo? When did he first tell his men his plans?

Gourgues did not land, though he might easily have done so, being mistaken for a Spaniard by the Spanish outposts. Instead, he ran up to the mouth of the St. Mary's River. Here the Indians would not permit the Frenchmen to land until it was made known that they were not Spaniards, whereupon they were received with every demonstration of joy. In three days, the chiefs Olocatora and Saturiba had their followers assembled, ready for the surprise of the forts on the San Mateo; and they brought with them a youth about sixteen years of age, Peter de Bré by name, who had escaped from Fort Caroline and who was now useful as an interpreter.

SAN MATEO DESTROYED. Just at dawn de Gourgues and his allies arrived near the fort on the north side of the mouth of the river, but were held back by the tide until mid-day; then they crossed and came close to the place before the Spaniards saw them. At the cry "The French! the French!" the garrison, thinking the French came on ships, rushed to the gates to escape, and the whole number was killed or captured. The fort on the opposite side was soon silenced, a few cannon having been fired at de Gourgues' party; and again every man was killed or captured. Reconnoitering parties were now sent out towards San Ma-
1568 teo, who captured a Spanish soldier disguised as an Indian, and from him they learned that the troops in San Mateo were ignorant of the real

Q. How did Gourgues' men receive his plan? Where did he land on the Florida coast? How did the Indians receive him? What youth was brought to him? Tell about the attack on the first Spanish fort at the mouth of the St. Johns River. Give an account of the second fort. What parties were sent out?

number of the invaders, supposing them to be about two thousand strong. This decided the French to attack at once. As they and their red allies drew near the Spanish fort, about sixty men came out to reconnoiter, whom de Gourgues cut to pieces, the Indians having got in their rear and thereby prevented their return. Upon this the garrison rushed out, panic-stricken, and endeavored to make their way to St. Augustine; but only a few, including the commander, succeeded in escaping. Much booty was secured in the fort; but before it could all be placed on board the vessels, an Indian, who was cooking fish, accidentally set fire to a powder-train leading to the magazine, and the explosion that followed destroyed the storehouses.

“NOT AS TO SPANIARDS, BUT AS TO TRAITORS, ROBBERS, AND MURDERERS.” The Spanish prisoners were now led to the spot where in 1565 Menendez had hanged part of the French taken in the capture of Fort Caroline, and were read a severe lecture. On the very trees where the Huguenots had swung, de Gourgues hung his Catholic captives, and nearby he set up a pine board with these words burned into it with a red-hot iron: “*Not as to Spaniards, but as to Traitors, Robbers, and Murderers.*”

RETURN OF DOMINIC DE GOURGUES TO FRANCE. In May, 1568, the avenger of the Huguenots of

Q. What was learned from the Spanish soldiers? How was a party of sixty cut up? What defense was made by the garrison? How was it that all the booty was not carried on board the ships? What did de Gourgues do with his prisoners? Give the inscription set up nearby. How did the Indians part with him?

Fort Caroline sailed for France amid the tears of his
May Indian friends, to whom he had to promise
to return within a twelvemonth. In France
he was received with great rejoicing. The king of
Spain demanded that he should be given up, and
Charles IX of France would have surrendered him
had he not concealed himself and remained
1568 hid for several years, till Charles gave him
assurance of protection, in the end making
him, it is said, admiral of the French fleet. He died
suddenly in 1582, regretted by many.

MENENDEZ AGAIN IN FLORIDA: HIS DEATH. At
the very time that Dominic de Gourgues was destroy-
ing San Mateo, Menendez was on his way across the
Atlantic with abundant supplies and reinforcements.
He had been made governor of Cuba, in addition to
the governorship of his own province of Florida.
Affairs in the latter region were in a wretched condi-
tion, owing to the hostility of the Indians and to the
lack of food and clothing. Menendez rebuilt San
Mateo; reëstablished his other posts on the coast; and
paid especial attention to the conversion of the natives.
He soon had missionaries teaching from the southern
point of Florida to the Chesapeake Bay, to which the
missionaries were guided by an Indian from that part
of the country who had been educated in Spain; but
he proved faithless, and the band of fathers was mas-
sacred, only one escaping (see page 96).

Q. How was he received in France? What office did
de Gourgues finally obtain? What was Menendez doing at
this time? How were affairs in Florida? Give an account
of Menendez's operations. Tell about the missionaries sent
to Chesapeake Bay.

As the importance of Florida declined, and as its maintenance caused a constant drain on his resources, the governor finally returned to Spain, leaving the government in the hands of his nephew, Pedro Menendez Marquez. In Spain he enjoyed the highest favor with the king, who, in 1574, appointed him to the command of the famous Invincible Armada which was to be fitted out against England; but in this same year he was attacked by a violent fever and died at Santander at the age of fifty-five.

SIR FRANCIS DRAKE BURNS ST. AUGUSTINE. After the departure of the energetic Menendez, the settlements in Florida became little more than military posts; and as no gold or silver was discovered, it was difficult to obtain settlers willing to engage merely in the tillage of the soil. In 1586 the famous English rover, Sir Francis Drake, was sailing along the coast on his way back to England from a freebooting expedition to the West Indies. On Anastasia Island he descried a platform raised on four masts, evidently a lookout station. Before sighting the lookout, neither Drake nor his men knew of a Spanish settlement in this part of the world. Late in the afternoon a cannon was landed on the point of the island nearest the Spanish fort, and two shots were fired, one passing through the Spanish flag, the other striking the ramparts; but nothing further was done on account of the darkness. During the night a French fifer, a survivor of the second Matan-

Q. Where did Menendez now go? How was he received in Spain? What important command was given him? How old was he at his death?

zas massacre, came out to the ships in a canoe, reported that the Spaniards had deserted their fort, and offered to act as a guide. Boats at once put off, and, after one or two shots from the few soldiers remaining, reached the fort, which had been deserted so hurriedly that about ten thousand dollars that were to pay the garrison fell into the hands of the English. The town also surrendered, the inhabitants fleeing towards San Mateo, and was burned in retaliation for the death of the English sergeant-major. Sir Francis also intended to destroy San Mateo and St. Helena, but was prevented from landing at these places by the stormy weather.

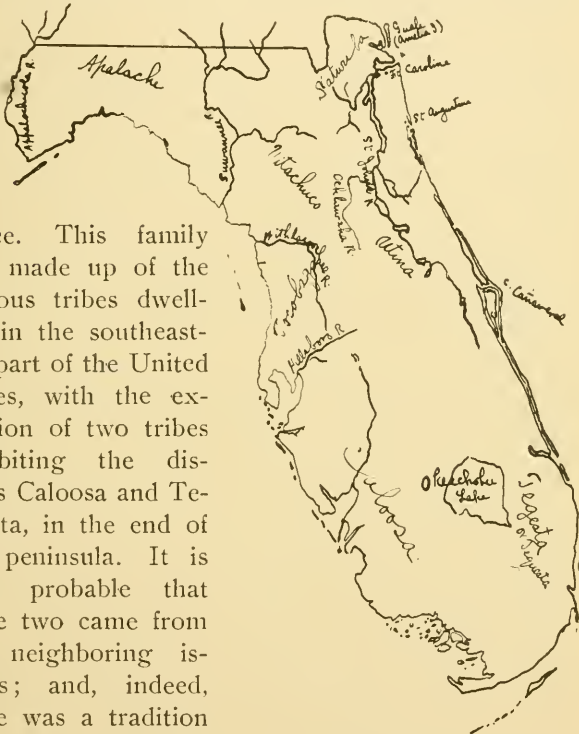
For the next hundred years the history of Florida is almost entirely a record of the efforts of missionaries to Christianize the natives.

Q. What now became of the colonies? Tell about Drake's finding St. Augustine. What was done in the evening? Tell about the fifer. Give an account of the taking of the fort. Of the town. What else did Drake intend to do? Give the character of the history of Florida for the next hundred years.

CHAPTER VI.

INDIANS: HISTORY—CIVILIZATION—RELIGION.

LINGUISTIC FAMILY: TRIBES. The Indians of Florida belong to the great family of Maskóki, or Mus-



cogee. This family was made up of the various tribes dwelling in the southeastern part of the United States, with the exception of two tribes inhabiting the districts Caloosa and Tequesta, in the end of the peninsula. It is very probable that these two came from the neighboring islands; and, indeed, there was a tradition that the people of Tequesta were the same as those who held the Bahama or Lucayan Islands. In the sixteenth century the

INDIAN TRIBES OF THE 16TH CENTURY.

location of the tribes was about as follows: The province of Tocobaga lay north of Caloosa between the Hillsboro and Withlacoochee Rivers, and extended eastwardly to the Ocklawaha. North of Tequesta, the southeastern corner of Florida, were the villages under the sway of the powerful Utina, whose residence was near the northern end of Lake George. Still further north, in the fertile district now known as Alachua and Marion counties, ruled Vitachuco, who, it will be remembered, gave Hernando de Soto a severe struggle. Saturiba, the ally of Dominic de Gourgues, held sway over the territory around the mouth of the St. Johns and northwardly along the coast nearly as far as the Savannah. Between the Suwannee and the Chattahoochee were the Apalaches. West Florida seems at this time to have been sparsely settled, for there is only one tribe mentioned there, the Pensacola or "hair-people", who belonged to the Choctaw nation, which according to tradition once had its abode in this region.

About one hundred years after the settlement of St. Augustine, when the original inhabitants had been reduced by prolonged conflict among themselves and with the whites, bands from various more northern tribes began to descend into Florida. The earliest band came from the Savannahs or Yemassee, who, pressed out from their own territory by the English settlers of Carolina, moved south and in the course of time occupied the region known as Middle Florida, where they became united with the remnants of the

Q. To what family did the Florida Indians belong? Where did the tribes of Caloosa and Tequesta come from? Where was Tocobaga? the realm of Utina? Where did Vitachuco rule? Saturiba? Where were the Apalaches?

old tribes. From near the same locality as the Yemassee came also the Uchees and the Apalachicolas (*Apalatchukla, not to be confounded with the Apalaches*), who, about 1716, settled under Cherokee Lechee on the banks of the river afterwards called the Apalachicola. These settlements were the most important communities of the Lower Creeks, who also occupied West Florida. Of the Creeks and the Seminoles a more extended account is necessary because of their importance.

CREEK NATION. The Creek Indians were the last of the great waves of migration which swept from the west across the Mississippi in the centuries preceding the arrival of Columbus, and at one time they held the territory embraced in the States of Mississippi, Alabama, Georgia, and parts of South Carolina and Florida. There is a legend that when Cortes conquered Mexico, the Creeks were the allies of the Tlascalans, but were frightened by the tales of Spanish prowess and fled northward. They continued in flight until they met the Alibamus, whom they defeated and continued to pursue across the Missouri, beyond the Mississippi, and southward, until finally a home and resting-place was found on the Coosa, Tallapoosa, and Chattahoochee Rivers. The name Creek was given them by early traders because of the numerous streams found in their country. During the eighteenth cen-

Q. What tribe has left its name in West Florida? Why were the original tribes reduced? Give an account of the Yemassee. Give an account of the Uchees and Apalachicolas. With whom must not the Apalachicolas be confounded? Who occupied West Florida in later times? Where did the Creek Indians come from? What territory did they once occupy?

ture the French, Spanish, and English vied with each other in courting the favor of the Creeks for the sake of their trade. In 1740 a band of these Indians accompanied General Oglethorpe in his expedition against St. Augustine, and during the Revolutionary War the whole nation sided



INDIAN WARRIOR, *De Bry, 1591.*

with the British. But of this and of their further history more will be said hereafter.

SEMINOLES. When Governor Moore of South Carolina endeavored to drive out the Spanish from St. Augustine in the year 1702, a part of his forces were Creek Indians, who kept possession of the lands north of the St. Johns, and, uniting

with runaway negroes from the English and the Spanish colonies, formed the nucleus from which came the Seminoles. The term *semanole* or *isti simanole* signifies *separatists* or *runaways*, and the Seminoles were always regarded as outcasts by the main body of the Creeks. The present Seminoles of Florida call themselves "Peninsula-people". By 1732 they claimed the

1750

country from the Flint River to St. Augustine, and began of their own accord to make incursions into the peninsula, as that of 1750

1800

when Secoffee and his band settled the Alachua region. Before the end of the last century they were in possession of the entire peninsula,

having absorbed the different remnants of the older tribes. Like the Creeks, during the Revolution they sided with the British; but they do not appear as a distinct body in American

history until the beginning of

1812 this century, when they were under the leadership of King

1817 Payne, a son of Secoffee.

1835 Payne was slain in a battle with the Americans in 1812.

In 1817 and again in 1835, they engaged in hostilities with the United

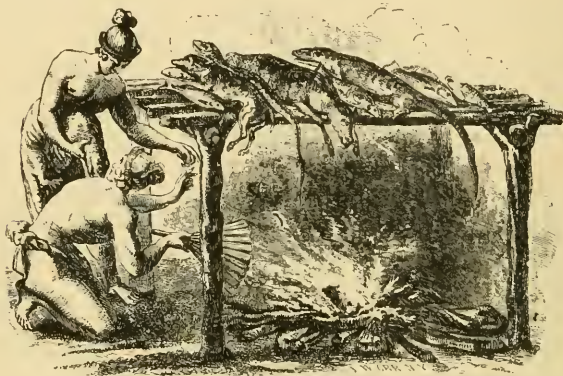


ARROW-HEAD.

Q. Relate the legend of the origin of the Creeks. What is the origin of the name Creek? Why did the English, French, and Spanish court the favor of the Creeks? Tell what is given about their history. What formed the nucleus of the Seminole nation? What does Seminole mean? How did the Creeks regard the Seminoles? What do the Seminoles call themselves? Mention something of their later history.

States, and the majority of them were finally removed to the Indian Territory.

The modern Seminoles are made up of separatists from the Lower Creek towns—but a large body of the Upper Creeks joined them after the war with the United States in 1814—of remnants of tribes partly civilized by the Spaniards, of Yemassee Indians, and some negroes.



INDIANS CURING MEATS FOR WINTER. *De Bry, 1591.*

CIVILIZATION OF THE ORIGINAL TRIBES. In appearance the Floridians were of a light brown color, somewhat darker on the southern coasts; "of great stature and fearful to look upon." Their terrible aspect was increased by the practice of tattooing their bodies for the purpose of enhancing their beauty and

Q. How did the Seminoles treat the old tribes? When do they first appear as a distinct body in American history? Under what leader? What finally became of them? Of what are the modern Seminoles made up? Describe the appearance of the Florida Indians.

of recording their exploits in war. Clothing was little needed in their southern climate; and so their attire consisted simply of deerskins dressed and dyed in various colors, besides which they wore light garments of moss or of palmetto leaves. But one description gives them little or no clothing. Their arms were bows and arrows, and spears, which were sometimes tipped with fish bones.

DWELLINGS. Old sketches made from memory by the French artist who was at Fort Caroline, represent the houses of these early peoples as round, with floors level with the ground, except in the case of the chief, whose house, in the centre of the village, was not round and sometimes had its floor lower than the level of the surface. In some districts the chief's house was on a high artificial mound, which was often capable of holding as many as twenty houses. The dwellings were grouped together in villages, and were surrounded with a close wall of posts set firmly in the ground and reaching above the surface about twice the height of a man. Occasionally, an entire village would be comprised within the walls of a single huge building, the different families living in the cabins built around the inside of the walls.

LIVELIHOOD. Agriculture was very simple. The ground was worked by means of sticks pointed at the end or with clam shells fastened to them, and yet it is said that a large yield was obtained in this way from

Q. Why did they tattoo? Describe their clothing. Describe their arms. How does the French artist represent their houses? How was the chief's house constructed? On what was it often placed? How were the dwellings grouped? Describe the occasional arrangement of a village. How was the ground cultivated?

the seed of maize, beans, and other vegetables, planted twice a year, in March and in June or July. If, as was invariably the case, this food did not supply the simple wants of the natives for a year, they took to the forest and lived the remainder of the time on roots and game. The waters of the coast furnished them with oysters and fish.



INDIANS TILLING THE SOIL. *De Bry, 1591.*



Proc. Amer. Ph. Soc.
HOE OR ADZ OF CONCH
SHELL—KEY DWELL-
ERS.

SPORT. The favorite sport was ball. To play this, a pole about fifty feet high was set up in the centre of the public square, and on the top was placed a mark which had to be struck with the ball in order to win the game. Musical instruments were a sort of drum and a flute made of cane, with which very unmelodious sounds were produced on festal occasions.

RULER. Very unlike the tribes in the northern parts of the United States, where a chief held his office only so long as he was superior in valor and wisdom, the Floridians were ruled by families in which the power of king remained and de-

Q. How often was a crop planted? What was done when the food supply failed? Give an account of the favorite sport. What musical instruments were used?

scended to the children of the first wife. Indeed, in Caloosa the king was considered divine and able to grant or withhold rain as he pleased. But among all the tribes he had absolute power over his subjects,

who were devoted to him and ready to lay down their lives for him at any time. It is said that even the food of the king was entirely different from that of his people.

CALOOSAS. Accusation has been brought against the natives of Caloosa that they were savage and given to piracy; but it is hard to blame them when it is remembered that large numbers of them



TRUMPETER. *De Bry, 1591.*

were carried away by slave-catching Spaniards, who at one time completely depopulated the Florida Keys.

The last remnant of the tribe were possessors of Cayo Vaco and Key West, where they were notorious for their cruelty to shipwrecked mari-

Q. How did the office of the chief differ among the Floridians from that of the northern tribes? Give an account of the king of Caloosa. Tell of the other kings of the tribes. What accusation is brought against the Caloosas? What can be said in their favor?

ners. In 1763 the whole body, to the number of eighty families, moved to Cuba, and have not again

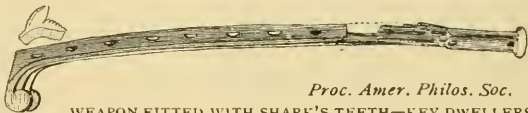


Proc. Amer. Philos. Soc.

TOY CANOE—KEY DWELLERS.

been heard of. The name of Caloosa lingers in Florida in Caloosahatchee.

WAR. NO American Indians were fiercer than the tribes which have at various times occupied the peninsula of Florida. This is attested by the experience of those who have tried to conquer them, from the days of Juan Ponce de Leon to the Seminole War, when for seven years a few hundred Indians held at bay the armies of the United States. Their methods of fighting were like those of other Indians. Some



Proc. Amer. Philos. Soc.

WEAPON FITTED WITH SHARK'S TEETH—KEY DWELLERS.

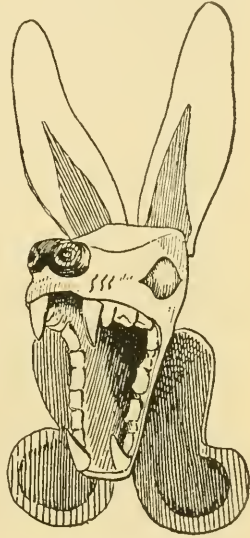
tribes used poisoned arrows; some used sculptured war clubs. A declaration of war rarely preceded an attack; but some of the tribes in northern Florida were accustomed to stick up arrows around the town or camp of the enemy on the evening before the attack. Fighting was always carried on by small bands, and was for the purpose of obtaining scalps, slaves, plunder, and hunting-grounds.

RELIGION. Idols were unknown among the Floridians. The sun and the moon were the objects of

Q. Give an account of the last remnant of the tribe. Where is the name Caloosa found? What was the character of the Florida Indians in war? How did some tribes fight?

their veneration and were honored by festivals, the principal festival being about the first of March at corn-planting time. A deer was sacrificed to the sun at the time of this festival, and its body or skin, stuffed with grain or fruits, was suspended from the top of a pole, around which a sacred chorus danced and sang.

In the northern portion of the peninsula, the *Toya* feast was celebrated about the time green corn became eatable. Those who wished to take part in the celebration were led by the priests into the public square, around which they danced and yelled three times, and then, suddenly breaking off, rushed into the forest, where they remained three days fasting, when they returned home to a famous banquet already prepared for them. In the meanwhile, the women had been weeping and wailing for them, tearing their hair and cutting themselves and their daughters with



Proc. Amer. Philos. Soc.
WOLF FIGUREHEAD FOR RELIGIOUS CEREMONIES—KEY DWELLERS.

stones; and as the blood flowed they caught the drops and cast them into the air, crying "He toya!" At the time of the full moon there was a great celebration. At first the priest, with face to the rising moon, made hid-

Q. Tell how war was declared by some tribes. How was fighting carried on, and for what purpose? What gods were worshipped? How were they honored? Describe the principal festival. Give an account of the behavior of the men at the *Toya*. Of the women.

ous noises and acted like a madman for the space of half an hour ; after this all joined in, making noises like various animals, and the ceremony was kept up till midnight. Human sacrifices were occasionally offered



and around the St. Johns River there was a custom of offering the first-born son. Serpents were held in veneration, as is illustrated by the story that when one of Dominic de Gourgues' men killed a snake, the natives cut off the head and carried it away with great care and respect. The same veneration existed also among the Semi-

Proc. Amer. Philos. Soc. notes.

KINGFISHER—BIRD-GOD OF WAR OF ANCIENT KEY DWELLERS.

An important man in the community was the priest or medicine-man, who was ready with his herbs and simples to cure the sick, and with his magic to supply rain or foretell the result of a battle. Often he promised the Indian brave that he should not be struck by bullets, and that he should conquer the enemy from a distance.

Q. Describe the ceremony at the time of a full moon. Give an account of human sacrifices. Tell about the veneration of serpents. Give an account of the medicine man.

Along the St. Johns River a priest or chief at his death was interred in a grave which had been dug in his dwelling and over which a low mound was raised; this was surrounded with arrows sticking in the ground, and was surmounted by the conch that had served him as a cup during his life. His possessions were gathered into his house and the whole burned.



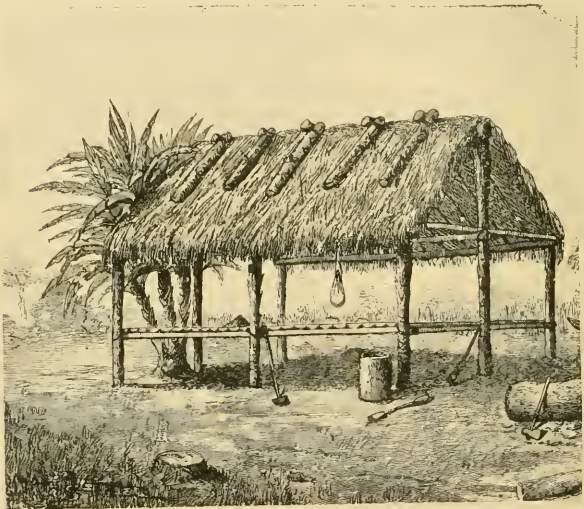
Rep. of Bur. of Ethnol.
MODERN SEMINOLE.

The tribe fasted for three days and nights, and his death was bewailed by the women for six moons, thrice each day. The Caloosas exposed the bodies of their dead to the air, seemingly to procure the bones, which were buried in an ordinary grave. It will be remembered that Juan Ortiz was set to guard bodies exposed in wooden coffins, in order to keep the wild beasts from carrying them off.

CUSTOMS, RITES, ETC., OF LATER TRIBES. As the original tribes belonged almost entirely to the Muscogee family, it is natural that there should be a great likeness between their customs, rites, etc., and those of the later tribes, who also belonged to the same family. But the Creeks and Seminoles had peculiarities which are in themselves interesting and instructive.

Q. Describe the grave of priest or king. What was done with his property? What ceremonies of mourning were employed? How did the Caloosas bury their dead? Who was set to guard the corpses? Why should the customs of later tribes be similar to those of the earlier?

APPEARANCE. The men of the Creek nation were large, powerful fellows; but in striking contrast was the smallness of the women, who were, however, very handsome—as would also appear from the number of marriages between white traders and Creek women. Some Seminoles exhibited their mixed origin of Indian and negro; but some were very tall and fine looking.



Rep. of Bur. of Ethnol.

MODERN SEMINOLE HOUSE.

PUBLIC SQUARE OF THE CREEKS. In the center of every Creek town of any size was reserved a piece of ground of square shape, in which were the only public buildings of the town, a *great house*, consisting of four

Q. Give the appearance of the Creek men as contrasted with that of the women. What is said of the appearance of the Seminoles? Describe the "square" of the Creek towns.

sheds opening on the "square", one on each side, and a *council house*, on a circular mound in the northeast corner. The "square" was the centre of all public life, and was the place where the annual *busk* was held. Here was also the play-ground, in the northwestern angle, with its pole in the middle, on the top of which

a mark was fastened, to be shot at with rifles or arrows. Traders called the play-ground *chunky yard*, from the principal game played in it, the game of *chunky*, which consisted of rolling on its edge a rounded stone, called the *chunke*, and then throwing a pole after it. The man whose pole lay nearest the stone when it ceased rolling won the game.



*Rep. of Bur.
of Ethnol.*

SEMINOLE WOMAN.

RED TOWNS AND WHITE TOWNS. Creek towns were divided into two classes, red towns, and white towns, a distinction which is said to have been a thing of the past by the end of the last century. The term *Red* refers to the warlike disposition of these towns, depicting, it is supposed, the wrath of the warrior on the war-path; and red paint was applied to one side of the posts of the warrior's house in the public square. These towns were governed by warriors only. *White* towns were peace towns governed by civil officers,

Q. For what was it used? What was in the middle of the playground? What name did the traders give it? Why? How were Creek towns divided? What does the term *red* refer to? How were the *red* towns governed? Give an account of the white towns. Tell about the knowledge of writing among the Creeks.

and were said to have been places of refuge for persons fleeing from punishment or from the vengeance of their pursuers.

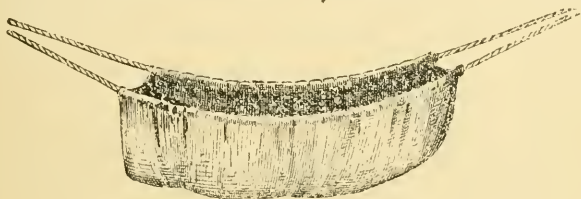
METHODS OF RECORDING EVENTS. In common with most of the tribes of North America, the Creeks possessed a knowledge of picture-writing, generally on tanned skins, such as the one given General Oglethorpe, which contained the legend concerning the migration of the Creeks. But this tribe had a method of recording events peculiar to themselves, namely, the use of strings of small beads in the shape of a narrow ribbon. Beads of various colors were employed, and their meaning depended on their size and position on the string. One old tradition thus preserved told how the Creek nation had once dwelled in cave-homes along the Red River of Louisiana, and how they had wandered thence to their homes in Alabama.

CONDITION OF WOMAN. Woman's life was drudgery. She prepared her lord's food; made salt; cultivated the earth; tanned deer skins and made moccasins of them; spun "buffaloe wool"; and manufactured the various articles of household use, baskets, brooms, pots, bowls, and other earthen and wooden vessels. Among the several tribes of the Muscogee family the children took the name of the mother, and not of the father; and in case of his death were cared for by her nearest relatives.

Q. What peculiar method of recording events did they have? What old tradition is thus preserved? Give an account of woman's life. Whose name did the children take? What kind of marriage was forbidden. How are those who have more than one wife punished among the Seminoles? How may the man be reinstated?

MARRIAGE. Intermarriage between members of the same family was forbidden. Divorce was very frequent; but a plurality of wives was not allowed. This offence is punished among the modern Seminoles by banishment of the man from the tribe, although he is reinstated if he can jump unseen into the midst of the ring at the green corn dance.

INITIATION OF BOYS. Creek boys were taught from an early age to accustom themselves to hardship: they had to swim in the coldest weather; had to undergo a scratching from head to foot with broken glass or gar-fish teeth, and, when covered with blood, wash



Rep. of Bur. of Ethnol.

SEMINOLE CRADLE.

in cold water. As a punishment, they were scratched in the same way without the wash in cold water. It is no wonder that the men suffered from rheumatism and other afflictions. Between the ages of fifteen and seventeen a Creek youth underwent the ceremony of initiation into manhood. First, he remained in a house for four days, eating only bitter roots; after this he came out wearing a new pair of moccasins. Then for twelve moons he could not eat the meat of young deer, of turkey-cocks, of fowls, nor peas, nor salt; nor could

Q. Give the method of accustoming boys to hardship. Describe the initiation. What effect was it supposed to have on the youth?

he pick his ears or scratch his head with his fingers but had to use a stick. At the end of the twelfth moon, he took a bath in cold water, the last act of the ceremony. During the period of his initiation the youth was supposed to have visions which revealed to him the principles of bravery, the modes of charming enemies at a distance and of obtaining scalps, riches and the way to obtain them. and the prospects of happiness and distinction. The ceremony ended, the young man now became a brave.

NAMES. Women and boys had only one name. Among the warriors there were war-names, such as "White Lieutenant", "Mad Dog", and "Old Red Shoe"; and also war titles, which were conferred for bravery in battle, such as "deer warrior", "deer crazy warrior", "deer heartless warrior", and "deer hallooing warrior". A promising young man could obtain by appointment the office of "leader"; from that could advance to the position of "upper leader"; and finally to the highest distinction of "great warrior". In time of war a "generalissimo", or commander-in-chief, was selected from all the "great warriors".

WAR CUSTOMS. War was not declared before the attack. When the "great warrior" determined to go on the war-path, he gave notice to his followers, and at his departure uttered the war-whoop and fired off his gun. This his men also did, although many of the warriors did not join him for two or three days.

Q. How many names had women and boys? Mention some war names. Give some war titles. What were the grades of advancement? How was the "generalissimo" chosen? Give the leader's method of starting on the war-path. Give an account of the marching of the party. Tell about the camp. What prisoners were spared?

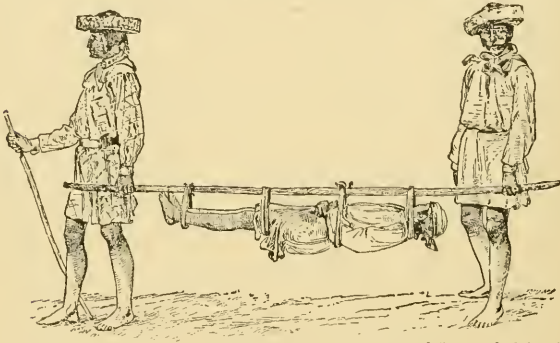
The war-party marched in single file, each man stepping in the tracks of the man in front, often the last man covering up the tracks with pieces of grass. At night every warrior lay close to his neighbor, forming a circle around the camp-fire, and no one moved after a signal given by the commander. All prisoners, with the exception of little children, were mercilessly slain by the Creeks.

GOVERNMENT. The tribe was divided into *gentes* or families, each with a name or *totem*, and the members of a family lived together, so that a village presented the appearance of several clusters of houses joined together. Among the Creeks, the principal families were the Wind, the Tiger, the Bear, and the Eagle, the first being the chief family and furnishing the Great Chief of the Confederacy, who was, however, of influence only as he was a man of superior wisdom and ability. He did not always unite in himself the office of governor and general, as was shown by the case of Alexander McGillivray, who had a Frenchman named Milfort appointed as commander-in-chief of the Creek nation. The Creeks were simply a union of many tribes and towns for the purpose of mutual defense, and every individual or town could go on the war-path at pleasure, even against the decree of the Great Chief. There was no fixed capital: the chiefs of the Confederacy met annually in some central town. In every town there was an executive officer

Q. How was the tribe divided? What appearance did the village present? Which were the principal Creek families? On what did the great chief's influence depend? How was his office often divided? What was the Confederacy? Where did the chiefs meet? Give the different grades of offices in a town? How did the Creeks address the Supreme Ruler?

called *Micco*, usually styled by the whites *King*; next to him in power was the *council*; after these the *old men* or advisers; then the *belov'd men*, who were distinguished in public service, especially as warriors.

RELIGIOUS BELIEFS; SUPERSTITIONS. The Creeks addressed the Supreme Ruler as "Source of Breath", who is simply the wind personified as God. But the four winds from the four cardinal points of the compass, were in an old legend represented as four females, from whom the original four clans of the Creeks were descended; and these winds were honored every year



Rep. of Bur. of Ethnol.

SEMINOLE BIER.

by the celebration of the Busk. Concerning the state after death, a distinguished chief said that an old notion was that the spirit went to the west, and there joined its family and friends who had gone before it; but there was no belief in future reward or punishment, except that the good spirit was cared for and the bad left to shift for itself. A belief in transmigration of

Q. Tell about the four winds. How were they honored? What was the belief about a future state? Tell about the Seminole's belief in transmigration of souls.

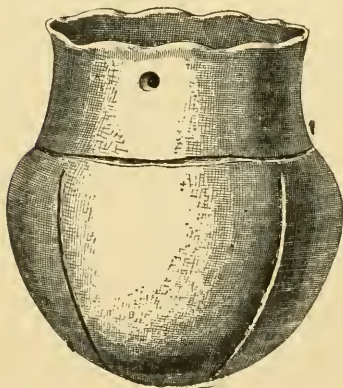
souls existed among the Seminoles, who held the infant over the face of its dying mother in order that it might receive her spirit. There is a story that once a female slave was slain on the tomb of a Seminole princess to be her companion and attendant in the other world. An interesting sacrifice was one offered every morning to the sun: at dawn the chief smoked before his door a pipeful of tobacco, and blew the smoke first towards the rising sun, then towards the other three points of the compass.

Among many tribes spread over North and South America there was a custom of thrashing the dogs of the town during an eclipse: a practice which the Creeks explained by saying that the big dog, meaning night, was swallowing the sun, and that by whipping the little dogs they could make him cease. Belief in charms was strong. A peculiar charm was the one given a young warrior, composed of the bones of a panther and of the horn of a fabulous snake. The old men of the tribe went to the edge of the water where dwelled the wonderful snake, and there sang the sacred songs, whereupon he rose to the surface. The songs were repeated, and the monster rose a little out of the water. At the next repetition he showed his horns, and one was cut off. A fourth time the old men sang, and, as the monster listened, his remaining horn was cut off. A piece of one of the horns was given the young warrior to keep off the arrows of his foes.

Q. What human sacrifice among the Seminoles is on record? Tell about the tobacco sacrifice. Give an account of the custom of thrashing dogs. What charm was given a young warrior? Describe the way in which the snake's horns were obtained. What power did a piece of the horn have?

Of one class of priests among the Creeks an old writer says that they dressed in white robes and carried on their head or arm "a great owlskin, stuffed very ingeniously, as an insignia of wisdom and divination. These bachelors are also distinguishable from other people by their taciturnity, grave and solemn countenance, dignified step, and singing to themselves songs or hymns, in a low, sweet voice, as they stroll about the towns".

ANNUAL BUSK. This festival lasted for eight days at the ripening of the corn. On the first day, the area of the great house was cleaned, and the *assi*, or black drink, brewed; a new fire was then kindled, and the women of the turkey family danced the turkey dance, after which *assi* was drunk. But the great day



EARTHEN JAR. FROM AN INDIAN MOUND.

was the last day, when the magic drink was prepared. Late in the evening a crowd gathered on the bank of a stream. Each man put a grain of "old man's tobacco" on his head and in each ear; and, after throwing some of it into the water, jumped in, picked up four stones, crossed himself four

Q. Give the old writer's account of certain Creek priests. How long did the Busk last? What was done on the first day? Describe the proceedings of the last day. What change took place at this festival? What was done to symbolize the change?

times with them, and threw them back into the river, at the same time uttering the death-whoop. The long dance ended the ceremony. After this all quarrels were forgotten; all crimes except murder absolved; and, as a symbol of the complete change, the utensils of the house were broken and replaced by new ones.

ANTIQUITIES. Along the St. Johns River, on the rich lands of Marion and Alachua counties, in the hammocks of the Suwannee, and scattered over many parts of the peninsula, are mounds, some of great height and extent, which examination has shown to be



tumuli for the deposit of the bones of the dead. Their great size is due to additions, made from time to time, to the original heap. In them are found pieces of pottery, stone axes and arrow heads, beads, etc., some of which go back to an early date, but others indicate that the mounds were built after the Spaniards had come into Florida. An old traveller gives an interesting description of a mound on Lake George, which was about one hundred yards across and twenty feet high; and leading from it to a pond three-quarters of a mile distant, was an avenue as level as a floor. Distinct from mounds of this character are the heaps of oyster shells along the Atlantic and Gulf coasts, of which some are natural deposits, and others are of artificial origin. A third class of antiquities should

Q. Where are Indian mounds especially found? What gave them their large size?

be mentioned, and that is the "Indian old fields", especially frequent in the fertile district of Alachua county. These fields once belonged to the Seminoles in the days when they held undisputed sway, and by



INDIAN MOUND NEAR TAMPA.

Morast, Tampa.

the marks of cultivation preserved in the tenacious soil, they can be easily distinguished from the lands tilled by the Spanish occupants.

Q. What are found in these mounds? Give what is said by an old traveller about a mound on Lake George. What kind of mounds are to be distinguished from these? Give an account of the "Indian old fields."

CHAPTER VII.

SPANISH MISSIONS--FORT MARION--PENSACOLA

FIRST ATTEMPTS TO CHRISTIANIZE THE INDIANS OF FLORIDA. From the first voyage of Juan Ponce de Leon every adelantado carried priests and friars with his army, in order that the spiritual needs of the natives might be supplied, whatever might become of their bodies. The first real missionary expedition was the unfortunate venture of Father Caucer in 1549, as already related; but the first successful establishment of a mission in Florida was effected after Pedro Menendez had founded St. Augustine in 1565.

MISSIONARY ZEAL OF MENENDEZ. Menendez brought over with him in the first instance, four Jesuits and twelve friars, and immediately after his colony had fairly begun he sent missionaries with an Indian brother of the chief of Axacan, along the coast northward towards Chesapeake Bay. Owing to bad weather, they sailed for Spain, where the Indian was baptized under the name Don Luis Velasco. In 1567 Menendez sent two zealous fathers, one of them named Rogel, to Caloosa, where he had already begun a settle-

Q. What did the adelantados bring with them? When was the first missionary expedition? After what date was the first successful mission established? Give an account of Menendez's first missionary effort. Tell about Father Rogel.

ment; but after two years Father Rogel gave up in despair and sought another field of labor in the country north of the Savannah. In the meantime, however, at the suggestion of these two missionaries, a seminary for the education of Florida youth was established at Havana, and the cacique of Caloosa's son was sent there to be educated; but in spite of all efforts to christianize and reconcile him to the Spanish supremacy, on his return home he became "more troublesome and barbarous than ever". Of ten

1568 missionaries who came over in 1568, one,

Father Antonio Sedeño, took up his residence on Guale or Amelia Island. Here he labored most diligently; but his only reward was the conversion of seven persons, and four of these infants in the throes of death, although it will be remembered Menendez claimed to have converted the natives

1570 of Guale in a body. Two years later the Indian, Don Luis Velasco, set out with a number of missionaries for the province of Axacan. After he had conducted them several days' journey into the wilderness, he deserted, but shortly returned with a band of warriors, who slew every missionary, one boy escaping out of the whole company. Later Menendez came to the Chesapeake Bay in person to chastise the murderers; but he could capture only eight Indians, whom he hanged from the yard-arm of his vessel, after they had been converted by Father Rogel. About this time the Jesuits gave up the attempt to

Q. What was established at Havana? Tell about the cacique of Caloosa's son. Give an account of Father Sedeño. Tell about the expedition led by the Indian Don Luis. What did Menendez do by way of punishing the murderers?

christianize the Indians of Florida, and their place was taken by the Franciscans.

FATHER ROGEL. When Father Rogel left Caloosa for the country north of the Savannah, he studied the language of the natives industriously, and in six months was able to preach to them in their own tongue. Much interest began to be displayed by them, and he was dreaming of success, when suddenly his whole flock disappeared into the woods: the time to gather their winter store had arrived. But, undaunted, he followed, and by liberally bestowing presents, gathered a few Indians into a village, when again they deserted him for the forest. Again he followed; and, after eight months' application, deciding that they were sufficiently instructed to receive baptism, he called a council of the chiefs and proposed that the tribe renounce the devil for the new faith. To the poor missionary's amazement, the leaders cried out unanimously: "The devil is the best thing in the world.

We adore him; he makes men valiant."

1569 Father Rogel gave up trying to convert these Indians, although it is said that he returned to them once more, this time barely escaping with his life.

MURDER OF MISSIONARIES. After the departure of Menendez the missionary work in Florida languished, until 1592, when twelve Franciscans arrived;

1592 then in two years there were said to be no less than twenty missions. Unhappily, one

1597 of these priests at Tolomato (*the present cemetery of St. Augustine*), Father Corpa, found it

Q. Who took the place of the Jesuits? How successful was Father Rogel in learning the tongue of the natives? How was he disappointed? What did he then do?

necessary to rebuke the cacique's son in public. This so enraged the young man that, gathering a band of braves from a neighboring village, he crept up to the chapel in the night, burst in the door, and murdered the missionary before the altar. With fiery eloquence the young chief incited the Indians of Tolemato to slay all the missionaries. They accordingly entered the chapel of Father Montes nearby, murdered him, and cast his body into an adjoining field. Gualè was then visited, and its missions destroyed, the missionaries being slain, except one Father Avila, who was made a slave and compelled to labor in the field until finally exchanged for an Indian, a prisoner in St. Augustine. The governor of St. Augustine hastened to the assistance of the priests, but arrived too late to do anything except to lay waste the fields and villages of the Indians, thus bringing about a severe famine.

MISSIONS AMONG THE APALACHES. In a few years the ruined missions were restored and others erected, so that by 1615 it was said there were twenty 1615 converts on the coast and in the interior. After the war with the Apalaches in 1638, in 1638 which they were defeated, missions were established among them, and within a few years Middle Florida was pretty thoroughly christianized, so thoroughly that over a century afterwards 1684 the remnant of the Apalache tribe preserved in their western home a portion of the Catho-

Q. What council did Father Rogel call? How did the chiefs answer his proposition? How much longer did he continue to preach to these Indians? How did missionary work thrive after Menendez's departure? Give an account of Father Corpa's death. Of Father Montez's death. Tell about the missions at Gualè. What was done by the governor?

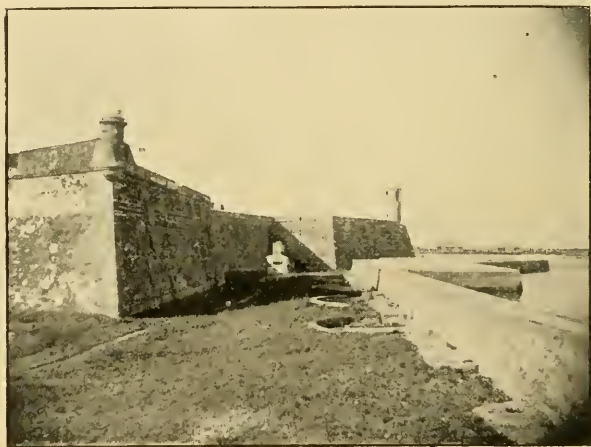
lic faith. In 1684 troubles began, for in this year the
Yemassees plundered St. Catharine's mission,
1696 but the work of the missionaries was greatly
aided by the overland route to Pensacola,
1704 which was founded in 1696. Destruction
soon came, however, with the inroads of the
1705 English under Governor Moore of South
Carolina in 1704, and of the Alibamus in
1705.

FINAL RUIN OF THE SPANISH MISSIONS. From
the time of Governor Moore's attack on St. August-
tine in 1702, there was a series of inroads
1702 into the province of Florida, following so
close on one another that it was impossible
to reëstablish the ruined missions before the final
death-blow came in the British occupation of
1763 1763. Every Spaniard withdrew from Flor-
ida. The new English possessors had no
1783 thought of converting the Indians; and when
Spain twenty years later once more counted
1819 Florida as her own, affairs were so unsettled
that the missions were not reopened. In
1819 Florida ceased forever to be a Spanish posses-
sion.

FORT MARION. When the Apalache Indians were
conquered in the war of 1638, large numbers of them
were brought to St. Augustine and set to

Q. How many converts were there in 1615? Give an ac-
count of missions among the Apalaches. How did the first
trouble begin? What effect did the founding of Pensacola
have? How did destruction come? Give an account of the
cause of the ruin of Spanish missions in Florida. What did
the English do for missions? Why did not Spain reopen her
old missions?

work on the new fort designed to take the place of the
old San Juan de Pinas; and for sixty years
1638 Apalache Indians were employed on the
structure, doing the heaviest part of the work. Fort
Marion, or, as the Spaniards called it, San Marco, is
constructed of coquina rock quarried on
1756 Anastasia Island, and was until modern times
a fortress of considerable strength. It was
completed by the governor, Don Alonzo Fernandez



Cox, St. Augustine.

FORT MARION.

de Herrera, according to the inscription over the gate-
way, in 1756, after nearly a century and a quarter of
hard labor bestowed on it by Indians, by con-
1842-3 victs from Mexico, and by the garrison; and
at the present time it stands as it was in the
1690 days of Don Alonzo, except that the water-
battery was reconstructed by the United
States in 1842-3. At the end of the seventeenth cen-

ture, in 1690, the fort, as well as the town, was endangered by the encroachments of the sea. Governor Don Diego de Quiroga y Losada called a meeting of the citizens and soldiers, who enthusiastically embraced the project of erecting a wall to keep out the ocean;



Cox, St. Augustine.

SEA-WALL, ST. AUGUSTINE.

but the work dragged slowly along, and it was not until many years after 1700 that the wall was completed. The present structure is much superior to the

Q. On what were the Apalache prisoners set to work? For how long? What material was used in Fort Marion? When was it completed? Who worked on it? What did the United States construct? Give an account of the sea wall, both old and new.

old one and about twice its length. It was built by the United States between the years 1837 and 1843 at the cost, it is said, of one hundred thousand dollars.

San Juan de Pinas was the name of the old wooden fort; but, at some uncertain date, the new stone fortress was christened San Marco, which after 1763 the English changed to St. John. When the Spaniards came again into possession, San Marco was once more its name, until the United States purchased Florida; and then this was changed into Marion, in honor of the Revolutionary hero.

BUCCANEERS PILLAGE ST. AUGUSTINE. The latter part of the seventeenth century saw many fair Spanish cities of America pillaged and burned by the freebooting buccaneers of the West Indies. St. Augustine

was no exception, if the story be true which
1665 makes Captain Davis pillage the town in 1665.

Fort San Marco was not at that time completed, and its garrison of two hundred men made no resistance.

FOUNDATION OF PENSACOLA. One hundred and thirty-three years after Tristan de Luna had failed so miserably in his attempt to establish a settle-

1560 ment on the shores of Pensacola Bay, another
1693 Spaniard, Don Andrés de Pes, visited the same harbour. As a memorial of his visit he

added *de Galva*, in honor of the viceroy of Mexico, to the name of the bay, which Tristan had named Santa Maria, thus making it *Santa Maria de Galva*. Three

years later, Don Andrés d'Arriola, with three
1696 hundred soldiers and settlers, laid the foundation of the future town of Pensacola near

Q. Give a history of the name of the fort.

the present site of Barrancas, where he erected a small fort and named it San Carlos. Close by were built several dwellings and a church. From this time on the name "Pensacola" for the settlement is found in Spanish annals, but its origin is wrapped in obscurity. The most plausible theory is that it is a Choctaw word meaning "hair-people", who have been already mentioned.*

PERDIDO RIVER THE BOUNDARY LINE BETWEEN THE SPANISH AND THE FRENCH. At first Spain laid claim to the whole circuit of the Gulf coast; but not long before the settlement of Pensacola, 1680-86 France asserted her right to the possession of the entire Mississippi Valley in virtue of the voyages of La Salle (1680-1686), thus cutting out a large slice of Spain's coast-line. A question now arose as to where was the boundary-line between Louisiana, France's name for her new possession, 1699 and Florida. In 1699 Lemoine d'Iberville arrived off Pensacola harbor, on his way to settle southern Louisiana. Seeing the masts of the Spanish vessels, he did not enter, though he asked

Q. What class of people were active in the latter part of the seventeenth century? Tell about the pillaging of St. Augustine. Who visited Pensacola Bay in 1693? What memorial did he leave? Give an account of d'Arriola's settlement. What is the origin of the name Pensacola?

* Gatschet, *Migration Legend of the Creeks*, p. 114. Similarly Fairbanks, *Hist. of Florida*. Campbell, however, *Hist. Sketches of Colonial Florida*, pp. 26ff., derives Pensacola from the Spanish *Peniscola*, the name of a small town in Spain. This name, he thinks, had been given to the settlement of Tristan de Luna, and had lingered in the traditions of the natives to reappear with d'Arriola.

permission to do so, which was refused; he then proceeded on his way to Biloxi, now in Mississippi. From Biloxi he moved his settlement, in 1702, to Mobile, now a city of Alabama. If he had arrived at Pensacola in advance of d'Arriola, Pensacola would have been a French possession; for France would have claimed the territory up to the Chattahoochee River; but as it was, Perdido River was chosen, in a most peaceful manner, as the boundary-line between French Louisiana and Spanish Florida.

Q. What territory did Spain claim? How did France cut into Spain's possessions? By what right? What question now arose? Give an account of d'Iberville's settlements. What would his arrival before d'Arriola have effected? What river became the boundary line between Louisiana and Florida?

CHAPTER VIII.

ENCROACHMENTS OF THE ENGLISH—SPANISH
INVASIONS OF SOUTH CAROLINA—GOVERNOR
MOORE INVADES FLORIDA—WAR BETWEEN
PENSACOLA AND MOBILE.

ENGLISH SETTLEMENTS IN VIRGINIA AND THE CAROLINAS. We have already seen that, to the Spaniard, Florida meant an indefinite extent of country north and west of the present Florida, as well as the comparatively small peninsula. France had trespassed on Florida with her Canadian settlements, or rather, attempts at settlements; and when at the end of the sixteenth century, Sir Walter Raleigh sent out his ill-fated colonies to Virginia, they also were on territory claimed by Spain. But her protests were unheeded, nor could she resort to force; for with the loss of the armada Spain lost her naval supremacy, and could no longer cope with the English or the French on the sea. The charter under which Jamestown was settled fixed the thirty-fourth degree of north latitude as the southern limit of Virginia; but the
1665 English settlements were too far away from the Spanish for any open act of hostility between them. In 1665 South Carolina received its

Q. What did Florida mean to the Spaniard? Where did France trespass on Florida? Why were not the first attempts of the English to settle Virginia frustrated by Spain? Where was the southern limit of Virginia? Why did not the English and Spanish settlements break out into open acts of hostility? How did South Carolina hurt the Spanish?

charter, which fixed the southern limit of this colony below St. Augustine, thereby making a most serious encroachment on Spanish rights; and, furthermore, Charleston furnished a convenient refuge for piratical vessels at that time preying on Spanish commerce. English traders, too, began to compete with the Spanish for the trade of the Indian tribes in Georgia and Alabama.

SPANISH INVASIONS OF SOUTH CAROLINA. To settle these grievances, the Spanish authorities deter-



SPANISH INVASION OF SOUTH CAROLINA.

mined to de-
1676 stroy the
English set-
tlements in South
Carolina. Accord-
ly, in 1676, on in-
formation from white
servants, who had fled

from the English, that the Carolina colony was discontented and in a wretched condition, a Spanish army advanced to the island of St. Helena, but was forced to retreat through the energetic resistance of the governor, Sir John Yeamans, and the timely arrival of reinforcements under Colonel Godfrey. In

1686 1686 another Spanish force invaded South Carolina, this time attacking Port Royal, which had been founded five years previously, and was very weak and without protection. The town was taken and plundered, many of the citizens being killed or severely beaten. An incursion was made up the North Edisto River, where many plantations were destroyed and Governor Morton's brother captured. He was confined in a galley that had been driven on

the beach, and, this catching fire, was allowed to burn to death—an act which aroused much indignation among the English colonies. During 1687 the next year Captain Don Juan de Aila went to Spain for supplies and reinforcements; but neither side made any further move for several years. De Aila's visit to Spain is noteworthy because for his services the king gave him the right to import negro slaves into Florida to work the plantations, and from this it would appear that African slaves had not been previously used, although Menendez had been authorized to bring five hundred with him for his colony. Only one negro came back with de Aila, but the occasion was made one of rejoicing by the inhabitants of St. Augustine.

ENGLISH INVASION OF FLORIDA. Causes of ill-feeling between the colonies of the two nations still remained; but during the term of Governor Archdale of South Carolina they had entered into friendly relations, which were, however, broken off on the election of a new governor, by name Moore, who, it is said, had not been scrupulous in regard to the means employed to secure the office, and for that reason wished to distinguish himself in some notable enterprise.

1702 The defenses of St. Augustine were said to be in bad condition; many of the colonists had

Q. For what did English traders compete with the Spanish? How did the Spaniards determine to settle matters? Give an account of the first Spanish invasion. What town was attacked in the second invasion? How did the Spaniards treat the citizens? Tell about Governor Morton's brother. Where did Captain de Aila go in 1687? In what was his visit noteworthy? How many negroes had Menendez been authorized to bring with him?

lost servants by flight to the Spaniards; and the War of Succession broke out in 1702 between France and Spain, on one side, and England, on the other. All these considerations concurred in influencing the Assembly of South Carolina to vote ten thousand dollars of our present money for an expedition to capture St. Augustine. It was thought that five or six hundred men with as many friendly Creeks would be sufficient. In the meantime, however, the Spanish governor, receiving information of the English preparations, had put St. Augustine in a respectable state of defense, and made provision for a siege of several months.

FAILURE OF GOVERNOR MOORE TO TAKE ST. AUGUSTINE. Colonel Daniel, who was in command of the land force, reached St. Augustine, going part of the way in boats, and, after driving the inhabitants into the fort, possessed himself of the town before Governor Moore's ships hove in sight. But after the arrival of the governor, the combined forces
1702 could do nothing, owing to the lack of mortars and guns of large calibre. A vessel was then sent to Jamaica for the necessary artillery, but the commander put back into Charleston; and, therefore, after waiting some time, Governor Moore despatched Colonel Daniel on the same errand. During the latter's absence two vessels appeared off the harbor, and,

Q. How many negroes did de Aila bring? What was the relation between the Spanish and English colonies? Give an account of Governor Moore. What influenced the Assembly to vote money for the enterprise? How large a force was thought sufficient to capture St. Augustine? What did the Spanish do in the meantime? Give an account of the land expedition under Colonel Daniel.

mistaking them for large men-of-war, Moore hurriedly abandoned his ships, stores, and ammunition to the enemy, and set out overland for South Carolina, which he reached without the loss of a single man. When Colonel Daniel returned, not knowing of the flight of the governor, he came near falling into the hands of the Spaniards. It seems to be proved that Governor Moore burned the town of St. Augustine before retreating, as a report of this affair before the English House of Commons speaks of such a burning. Moore's expedition cost the colony of South Carolina about six thousand pounds.

GOVERNOR CUNIGA ASKS AID FROM SPAIN. After a siege of three months the inhabitants of St. Augustine returned to their homes, only to find them destroyed. Assistance had to be secured from Spain to aid in rebuilding the town; besides this Governor Cuniga represented to his government the need of strengthening the colony against the English, and of establishing garrisons among the Apalache Indians and in other parts of Florida.

APALACHES DEFEATED BY THE CREEKS. Towards the end of 1702 nine hundred Apalache warriors, incited by the Spaniards, planned an inroad on the English; but on the way they were drawn into an ambuscade by five hundred Creeks, who had been assem-

Q. What was done on Moore's arrival? Why? Who was sent to Jamaica for artillery? Why did Governor Moore flee? What did he leave for the enemy? What came near happening to Colonel Daniel? What did Moore burn? How much did the expedition cost? What aid did the Spaniards receive from Spain? Give an account of the nine hundred Apalaches.

bled to repel them. The wily Creeks hung up their blankets, as if they were quietly resting in camp, although in reality concealed in the bushes nearby. As the Apalaches came on, thinking to take the enemy unawares, the Creeks in ambush rose at the proper moment and routed them with great loss.

RUIN OF APALACHE. Scattered through the region of Apalache between the Suwannee and Apalachicola Rivers were several Spanish stockades in connection with chapels, which had been erected for the missionaries, who found the natives most willing to adopt Christianity; but at this time the whole Spanish force in this district scarcely amounted to fifty. Consequently, not much resistance was offered to the invasion of Governor Moore in either 1703 or 1704. Entering the country by way of the Flint River, with about fifty white men and one thousand Creek Indians, he captured a town on the first day, and on the second met and defeated a small Spanish and Indian force under Don Juan Mexia, who was slain in the battle. No further resistance was offered. Governor Moore visited all the other towns, destroying and plundering, carrying off even the sacred vessels and garments of the churches, and dragging numbers of the natives into slavery on pretense of retaliating for the slaves who had run away from South Carolina.

Q. What were scattered through Apalache? How were the natives inclined towards Christianity? What was the size of the Spanish force in Apalache? How large was Governor Moore's army? Give an account of his expedition.

The missions were ruined. It is sad to think that thus in the name of religion—for Governor Moore claimed to be zealous for the Christian faith—the light, however faint, should have been taken
1708 away from these poor, ignorant savages. The
1705 repetition of the raid in 1708 completed the
destruction which the incursion of the Alibamus in 1705 had helped on. Governor Moore received from the English much praise for the success of this expedition into the enemy's territory.

COMBINED FRENCH AND SPANISH INVASION OF SOUTH CAROLINA. In 1706 a French frigate and four
1706 sloops touched at St. Augustine, and took
on board part of the garrison, for the purpose of invading South Carolina. But, fortunately, the ships became separated and entered the English colony at different points. A bold demand to surrender was sent to the governor, whose name was Johnson, to which he replied: "I hold the country for the queen of England. My men will shed the last drop of their blood to defend it from the invader." The Carolina troops commanded by Colonel William Rhett then assailed the enemy's scattered forces, and though numerically inferior, succeeded in capturing the frigate and in driving off the other vessels. No further invasion of South Carolina was made by the Spaniards.

FAMINE AT ST. AUGUSTINE. St. Augustine had been settled nearly one hundred and fifty years, and yet in

Q. How were the missions affected? How was the ruin completed? What did the English think of Moore's expedition? What ships touched at St. Augustine in 1706? For what purpose? Give Governor Johnson's reply to the demand for surrender. Give the English success.

1712 the inhabitants were reduced to such a state of
hunger that horses, cats, and dogs were eaten
1712 to sustain life. It is strange that this should
have happened when fish, oysters, and tur-
tles were plentiful, and the country around the town
fertile.

ARRIVAL OF YEMASSEES. Up to 1714 the Yemassee
Indians of Carolina had been friendly to the Eng-
lish colonists, and had on more than one oc-
1714 casion acted as their allies; but suddenly in
the year just mentioned they made a powerful
attack on their former friends. The English, however,
rallied and drove them from the province into the
Spanish territory; and it is said that at St. Augustine
they were received with salvos of guns and ringing of
bells. This fact, combined with the removal of their
families to Florida previous to the attack, renders it
probable that the Yemassee had been incited in their
uprising by Spaniards. Thirteen years later
1727 Colonel Palmer raided over the Florida bor-
der, and around St. Augustine found the
Yemassee, most of whom he slew, at the same time
laying waste their fields and villages. The survivors
were incorporated into the Seminoles, and a few Ye-
massee were carried west at the end of the Seminole
War (1835-1842).

MRS. BARROWS. The fugitive Indians kept up a
harassing warfare over the border into South Caro-

Q. To what state were the inhabitants of St. Augustine
reduced in 1712? Why is this strange? Tell about the Ye-
massee uprising. Where were they driven? How were they
received at St. Augustine? Give reasons why it appears that
they were incited by the Spaniards.

lina, committing many barbarous outrages on the frontier families. On one occasion a party of savages seized a certain Mrs. Barrows and one of her children, who were hurried away; but the child beginning to cry, it was immediately killed before its mother's eyes, and she was told to cease grieving or she would suffer the same fate. At St. Augustine she was cast into prison, though one Indian chief begged that she should not be treated in this way. Her husband endeavored to secure her release, but was himself cast into prison, and there he soon died. After a long period of confinement and of harsh treatment Mrs. Barrows was allowed to return to South Carolina, where the story of her barbarous treatment excited much sympathy.

ST. MARKS AND ST. JOSEPH. In 1718, during the month of March, Don José Primo de Ribera, at the request of the chief of the Apalaches, erected 1718 a fort in the Apalache territory, which he Mar. named San Marcos de Apalache, the present St. Marks. During the same year a small French fort was erected on St. Joseph's Bay and named Crèvecoeur (*Heart-break*), but was abandoned on remonstrance from the Spanish governor at Pensacola. A Spanish fort was erected on the same spot and soon given up as useless.

FRIENDLY RELATIONS BETWEEN PENSACOLA AND MOBILE. At first Governor Ravolli of Pensacola en-

Q. Give an account of Colonel Palmer's raid. What became of the surviving Yemasseees? What warfare did the fugitive Yemasseees keep up? Relate the story of Mrs. Barrows and her sufferings. Tell about the settlement of St. Marks. Give an account of the forts erected on St. Joseph's Bay.

deavored to drive the French away from Ship Island ;
for a period of nineteen years after this the
1700 Spanish and French were on the friendliest
1719 of terms: on one occasion the starving gar-
rison of San Carlos was relieved by provis-
ions from Mobile, a favor which the Spaniards had the
opportunity to return. In 1706-7 Bienville
1706-7 aided Pensacola against a threatened attack
of English and Indians, which, happily, did
1713 not come. From a letter written in 1713 we
learn that a petty trade had sprung up be-
tween the two towns, Mobile furnishing Pensacola
with lumber, poultry, and vegetables.

CAPTURE OF PENSACOLA BY THE FRENCH. But
suddenly on the 14th of May, 1719, three French ves-
sels appeared before San Carlos, and in its
1719 rear a force of French and Indians. What
May could Governor Don Juan Pedro Metamoras
14 do but surrender? Private property of the
soldiers or of the citizens of the town was not
to be molested; the garrison were to march out with
honors of war, retaining one cannon and three charges
of powder, and be transported to Havana in French
vessels.

News travelled slow in those days, and thus it was
that Governor Metamoras did not know of the decla-
ration of war against Spain made by France
1718 in December, 1718, which was announced
several months before the colonies of the

Q. What state of feeling existed beteen Pensacola and
Mobile? Give some instances in which this friendly feeling
was shown. What trade sprang up between them? How
was this intercourse broken in May, 1719? What were the
terms of the surrender?

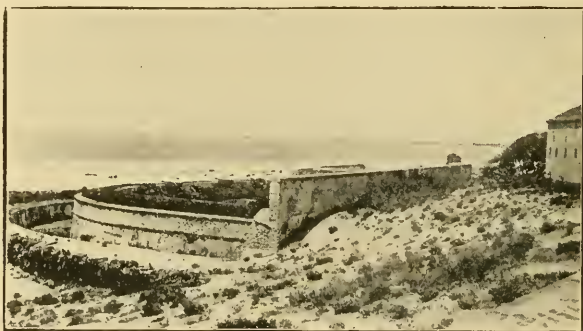
two countries in America received news of it. As soon as Bienville received information of the war between the Spaniards and French in Europe, he planned a sudden descent on Pensacola, and succeeded in the manner related.

RECAPTURE OF PENSACOLA. As soon as the French vessels arrived at Havana with the prisoners, they were treacherously seized and their crews 1719 imprisoned by order of the governor of the city; and, at the suggestion of Metamoras, an expedition was immediately prepared to retake Pensacola, part of the soldiers going in the captured French vessels. When Metamoras arrived as commander of the Spanish forces before the harbor of Pensacola, he sent in the French ships in advance of his fleet, in order that they might secure favorable positions in front of San Carlos before the trick should be discovered. As they hove to with broadsides to the fort, the Spanish flag was displayed at the masthead, and a summons was sent to the French commander to surrender. Chateaugné peremptorily refused. A harmless cannonade followed, after which he obtained a truce of two days from the Spaniards, and despatched a messenger to his brother Bienville at Mobile for reinforcements; but they never came. After the expiration of the truce another cannonade took place, and this resulted in the surrender of the French garrison, who were to march out with honors of war and be transported to Havana, there to await an ex-

Q. Why had Bienville made the attack? What happened to the French at Havana? What was undertaken at once by the Spaniards? Tell about the trick played by Metamoras at Pensacola Bay. How did Chateaugné receive the summons to surrender? Give an account of the bombardment.

change of prisoners. But they were not to remain in prison long.

THIRD CAPTURE OF PENSACOLA. Metamoras at once set about strengthening his defenses. On Point Seguenza, the western end of Santa Rosa Island, a battery was erected, and named Principe d'Asturias; behind San Carlos a stockade was reared, to guard against a land attack. Some six hundred men manned the various works.



MEDIA LUNA OF SAN CARLOS. *Turton, Pensacola.*

The Spaniard's expectation was not disappointed: September 18th brought Bienville and a 1719 French fleet under Champmeslin, who had Sept. accidentally arrived at Dauphin Island in a 18 very opportune time. Six ships composed the naval force, but only five were able to pass over the bar at the mouth of the bay, the sixth, the *Hercules*, of sixty-four guns, drawing too much water. Two hundred and fifty men lately from France, a large

Q. What were the terms of surrender? Give the works erected by Metamoras as defenses. How was Bienville aided in his attack on Pensacola? Which vessel could not enter? Give the land force.

number of Canadian volunteers, and five hundred Indians attacked the fort in the rear. At first the five vessels that entered engaged Principe d'Asturias, the Spanish fleet, and San Carlos, and were getting the worst of the fight, when a Canadian pilot on the *Hercules* inspired her commander with the belief that he could carry her over the bar. Soon the good ship's broadsides battered Principe d'Asturias to silence, while her consorts, relieved in this direction, compelled the surrender of the enemy's fleet, which had run short of powder. In the meantime, the land force had been held in check by the stockade, but now San Carlos being left alone, and the yells of the savages bringing visions of scalping to the minds of the Spaniards, the garrison surrendered at discretion. Enough were sent to Havana to exchange for the prisoners there, the remainder to France as prisoners of war.

Pensacola was destroyed; San Carlos was blown up, except its magazine a half a mile away; and on the ruins of the fort a tablet was set bearing this inscription: "In the year 1719, upon the 18th day of September, Monsieur Desnade de Champmeslin, commander of the squadron of his most Christian majesty, took this place by force of arms, as well as also the island of Santa Rosa, by order of the king of France."

Six months later peace was established between France and Spain; and in January, 1723, Bienville gave back to Spain the site and Jan. surroundings of Pensacola, having received orders to that effect from his government.

Q. Tell about the battle of the five French ships. Of the *Hercules*. What brought about the surrender of the garrison? What was done with the Spaniards? How were the town and fort treated? Give the inscription on the tablet erected.

CHAPTER IX.

GENERAL OGLETHORPE ATTACKS ST. AUGUSTINE—INVASION OF GEORGIA BY GOVERNOR MONTEANO.

TROUBLES BETWEEN SOUTH CAROLINA AND FLORIDA. Inroads of the Yemassee into South Carolina continued, if anything, worse than ever; and a small fort, Fort King George, was built on the Altamaha to guard against their attacks. This was considered by the Spaniards a gross encroachment on their territory. Consequently they addressed the British crown, and a conference of the governors of the two colonies was arranged, at which the grievances of both parties were to be settled; for the Spanish complained of the harboring of their runaway slaves at St. Augustine. A conference was held at Charleston in 1725; but the British governor refused to abandon Fort King George, nor would the Spaniard give up the fugitive servants, as his master cared too much for their souls, although he was willing to pay for them. 1727 After this matters went on worse than ever, and two years later Colonel Palmer, with three hundred men and a band of Indians made a descent on the Spanish colony, pillaging and destroying up to the very gates of St. Augustine. For a few years after this inroad there was comparative quiet.

Q. Why was Fort King George built? How did the Spaniards regard it? What conference was arranged? Give the British complaint. How did the conference end?

FOUNDING OF GEORGIA. In 1732 George II granted to James Oglethorpe and others the territory west of the Savannah River, lying between the thirty-first and thirty-fifth parallels of north latitude and extending across the country to the South Sea (*Pacific Ocean*). On the

following years a settlement was made at Savannah as the beginning of the colony of Georgia, which had for one of its objects the protection of South Carolina from Spanish interference. Treaties with the Indians gave Oglethorpe control of the country as far as the mouth of the St. Johns. A colony of

Scotch Highlanders was planted at Darien in 1735, and in 1738 a company of emigrants settled Frederica on St. Simon's Island. Also on Amelia Island a lookout and a little settlement of forty persons was established, but on the 16th of November, 1739, a party of Spaniards killed two of the settlers and mutilated their bodies. This was the first blood spilt in the coming contest between the colonies of the two nations.



GEN. JAMES OGLETHORPE.

Q. Tell about Colonel Palmer. What effect did his invasion have? Describe the territory of Georgia.

Cumberland Island, too, contained a fortress built under the direction of General Oglethorpe.

WAR BETWEEN ENGLAND AND SPAIN. When in 1736 a Spanish commissioner demanded that the English should evacuate the country south of the Savannah, and it became more and more evident that a war with Spain was imminent, Oglethorpe hastened to England, where he obtained considerable pecuniary aid, raised a company of six hundred men, and received the rank of general, with command of the militia of Georgia and South Carolina. In this latter colony five hundred men were raised and put in charge of Colonel Vanderdussen. A large number of warriors were also sent to the aid of the English by the Cherokees and Creeks, who had been won by the bold conduct of General Oglethorpe: he had penetrated to the interior of their country, and had entered into an alliance with them at their grand council in Coweta. In addition, a company of Highlanders under Captain McIntosh formed part of the English land force. The *Flamborough*, the *Squirrel*, the *Phoenix*, and the *Tartar*, each of twenty guns, and two sloops of war, were to attack St. Augustine from the sea.

Although St. Augustine was imperfectly protected and poorly garrisoned and provisioned, so that a sud-

Q. What was one of the objects of the settlement of Georgia? How far south did treaties with the Indians give Oglethorpe control? Give an account of the settlements at Darien, Frederica, and on Amelia Island. On Cumberland Island. Why did Oglethorpe go to England? With what success? What troops were raised in South Carolina? What Indians sent warriors? How had Oglethorpe won over the Creeks?

den attack might have surprised it, yet because of the preliminary skirmishes of the English, Governor Monteano received timely warning, and was able to complete the defenses of Fort San Marco; 1739 for in December, 1739, General Oglethorpe Dec. had ravaged the Spanish territory up to the gates of St. Augustine, and had attempted to capture Fort Piccolata and St. Francis de Poppa. The former of these forts, situated west from St. Augustine on the right bank of the St. Johns and opposite to Fort Poppa, was, in fact, taken not long afterwards in the month of January. About twenty miles north of the town was Fort Diego, on the property of Don Diego de Spinosa, and only two miles away stood Fort Moosa, better known as the negro fort, as it was erected for the protection of runaway slaves. It was a square structure, banked around with earth, and was situated in the middle of a plantation to guard against surprise from the Indians. A fortified line ran from Fort Moosa to the stockades on the San Sebastian River. Governor Monteano strengthened his defenses, especially around St. Augustine, in- 1740 creased his garrison, and sent to Cuba, to Mar. Pensacola, and to Mexico for aid. At this time, March, 1740, the population of St. Augustine, of all classes, was two thousand one hundred and forty-three.

Q. What additional land force was there? What constituted the naval force? What was the condition of St. Augustine? How had Oglethorpe given Monteano warning? Where were Forts Piccolata and Poppa? Give an account of Forts Diego and Moosa. What fortified line? What did Monteano do? Give the population of St. Augustine in 1740. When was war declared between England and Spain?

War was declared between England and Spain in October, 1739, but it was not until 1739 April, 1740, that General Oglethorpe was Oct. ready to march against the Spanish town, and 1740 not until the latter part of May were all the forces at the rendezvous at the mouth of the St. Johns.

THE SIEGE BEGUN. While waiting, the general busied himself by taking Fort Diego, whose garrison retired to St. Augustine, and by reoccupying Fort

Piccolata, thus cutting off the enemy's supplies from the interior. On the first day of

June 1 June he advanced to Fort Moosa, which was found deserted, and having torn away part of the walls he returned to Fort Diego. But before doing so he

despatched Lieutenant Bryant on a reconnoitering tour around St. Augustine. This officer reported on his return that the inhabitants had been thrown into great confusion by his approach, "screeching and crying", and he recommended an immediate attack; but

this Oglethorpe did not think advisable.

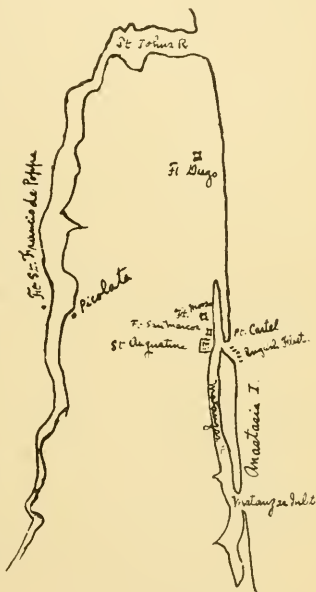
June 6 Five days later Colonel Vanderdussen arrived marching along the shore to Point Car-

tel, and about the same time the fleet also put in an appearance. Three batteries were erected: one, of five guns, on the northern end of Anastasia Island; another, of two guns, on the edge of a piece of high, wooded ground on the same island; a third, of seven guns, on the north beach, at North River Point, called

Q. When was Oglethorpe ready for operations? While waiting, how did he busy himself? Tell of Fort Moosa. Give an account of Lieutenant Bryant's reconnoitering. When did Colonel Vanderdussen and the ships arrive? Describe the batteries erected.

San Mateo. The ships were to block the mouth of the harbor, while Colonel Palmer was stationed at Fort Moosa, so that provisions from the interior June 20 might not reach the town. Siege of St. Augustine formally began on the 20th. On the 24th the batteries opened fire on the fort and town.

AFFAIR AT FORT MOOSA. According to the usual statement, when 1740 Colonel Palmer was stationed at Fort Moosa, General Oglethorpe gave him orders not to remain long in one place, but to use the fort as headquarters; and the Colonel did not obey, thus bringing on the disaster now to be related. With Colonel Palmer was Captain McIntosh and his Highlanders, who because of a misunderstanding became insubordinate, and June 25 refused to obey Colonel Palmer's orders. On the



OGLETHORPE'S CAMPAIGN, 1740.

night of the 25th, three hundred Spaniards attacked Fort Moosa. It is hard to call the attack a surprise; for early in the night a sentinel informed Colonel Palmer that he could hear the Indian war-dance, upon

Q. How were the town's provisions to be cut off? When did the siege open? When did the firing begin?

which the colonel said an attack must be expected, and went into the fort to rouse the garrison; but the soldiers, not regarding him, lay down to sleep again. About three in the morning a sentinel reported the advance of a body of men. Colonel Palmer gave orders that his men should stand by their arms, and receive the enemy's first fire; that then half of them should discharge their guns, fall back, and let the other half fire; and then they would kill the enemy like dogs. But some Highlanders began to fire at once. Colonel Palmer formed his rangers in the ditch, while one Jones ran within to rally the garrison; but Jones could not find Captain McIntosh, and Captain McKay, half undressed, could do nothing. The Spaniards, coming on in several parties, attempted to force the gate, but a well-directed fire kept them back. Finally, however, sword in hand, they beat back the defenders, who, as soon as they saw the battle lost, endeavored each one to save himself. Captain McIntosh was taken prisoner; Colonel Palmer was slain—it appears by a bullet coming from the interior of the fort; fifty others were killed, and twenty captured. The loss of the Spaniards was about the same as the slain among the English. Whatever may have been the reason

1740 for the disaster, certain it is that it had a most cheering effect on the Spaniards, who were encouraged to defend the castle of San Marcos to the last extremity.

Q. Give the usual reason assigned for the disaster at Fort Moosa. What part of the force refused to obey? Why was the attack not exactly a surprise? Give Colonel Palmer's order when the enemy attacked. How was he obeyed? What was done by Palmer and Jones? Where did the Spaniards try to force their way in? Give an account of the capture. Give the loss on both sides.

PROSECUTION OF THE SIEGE. Just after the siege began General Oglethorpe sent in a summons to surrender. The governor replied that by the holy cross "he would defend the castle to the last drop of his blood, and hoped soon to kiss his excellency's hand within its walls". It is said that the majority of the people of St. Augustine were in favor of surrendering on condition of being carried to Havana, but that Governor Monteano had heard in some way that the commander of the English fleet had told Gen-

July 5 eral Oglethorpe that it was not safe to remain on the coast later than the fifth day of July; and so he held out. For twenty days the batteries played on the town without doing any damage. This was due to the short range and bad handling of the guns, but especially to the material of which the walls of the fort were built, a soft stone called coquina, which allowed the balls to embed themselves, but did not itself crumble. One hundred and fifty years have passed since Oglethorpe's cannon awoke the echoes in the harbor of St. Augustine, but the marks of the shot are still to be seen on the walls of Fort Marion. A night assault was planned, but was never carried out. The Chickasaw Indians deserted, as General Oglethorpe, ignorant of savage warfare, had called them barbarous dogs, when they brought him as a trophy the head of a Spanish Indian.

PROVISIONS REACH ST. AUGUSTINE. Governor

Q. What effect did the affair have on the Spaniards? What was Monteano's reply to the summons to surrender? How did the people feel? Why did the governor hold out? Why did the batteries do no damage? What are still to be seen on the walls? What caused the desertion of the Chickasaw Indians?

Monteano wrote to the governor of Cuba, "Provisions or I starve"; and the English commander
1740 knew of the distress of the town. He bent his energy on keeping the Spaniards from receiving supplies from abroad, but he did not know that sixty miles down the coast at Mosquito Inlet was a harbor where boats could carry provisions by tide-water communication to within a few miles of Matanzas River, up which they could be conveyed to St. Augustine. Some half-galleys in the harbor, mounted
July 7 with guns, annoyed the general much by threatening a night attack; mosquitoes and flies were troublesome; sickness broke out; and the batteries proved inefficient; but still he kept hoping to starve out the garrison of the fort until July 7; then he learned that vessels had been seen at Mosquito Inlet, and on the same day the commander of the fleet informed him that it was necessary to stand off
July 13 the shore, since the east winds had begun to blow. Six days later scouts on Anastasia Island sighted launches coming up the Matanzas River, and a party of English attempted to cut them off, but was repulsed. St. Augustine received provisions, and the siege became useless.

RETREAT OF THE ENGLISH. Accordingly, a council of the English officers decided that it would
July 17 be best to withdraw. On the 17th the guns from the batteries were put on board the

Q. Give Monteano's message to the governor of Cuba. What point did Oglethorpe leave unguarded? How could provisions be brought to St. Augustine in this way? Mention the annoyances the English were subject to. What news did the general receive on July 7? What did the commander of the fleet tell him? Tell of the launches.

ships, with the exception of four which were buried in the sand. A small amount of stores was destroyed; among them was some liquor that the soldiers drank freely of, disliking to see it wasted. Two days later the ships stood out to sea, and on the 20th the besieging army marched by the walls of San Marcos, with drums beating and banners flying; but the Spaniards could not be induced to come out. On the first night General Oglethorpe encamped at a distance of three miles, and from there he marched to the mouth of the St. Johns, whence he sailed in a few days for Frederica.

Much ill-feeling arose between South Carolina and Georgia in consequence of the failure of this expedition, each endeavoring to cast the blame on the other. The fact is that the season was a most unfavorable one; the force was not adequate for the task imposed upon it; the siege artillery was in no way capable of making a breach in the walls of the castle, and delay had prevented its capture by surprise.

EXPEDITION FROM ST. AUGUSTINE TO ATTACK GEORGIA. From deserters Governor Monteano heard that General Oglethorpe was preparing to return in the spring. Accordingly, he set about strengthening his position at home, and sent urgent messages to his superior in Cuba to give him reinforcements, which at last arrived in the shape of eight companies of infantry. In the meantime, a great fire broke out in Charleston nearly destroying the entire town, and besides this the colony was suffering from the heavy

Q. What did the English decide? What was destroyed? How did the army march away? How was the failure received at home? What caused his failure? Why did Monteano strengthen his position?

debt incurred in the campaign of 1740 against St. Augustine. Affairs in Georgia were also in a bad state.



MONTEANO'S CAMPAIGN, 1742.

These circumstances combined made an excellent opportunity for Monteano to assail his English neighbors, although their Indian allies kept him constantly cooped up in his town. An expedition was planned for the spring of 1742, and early in that year troops arrived from Cuba; but a serious de-

delay was occasioned by the reluctance of citizens to form a part of the army of invasion. Finally, however, about one thousand men from the garrison and the town were added to the Cuban force, making in all over five thousand soldiers, who were conveyed in fifty-one boats, large and small. But they were not to find General Oglethorpe unprepared.

As soon as he had been informed of the intended invasion, 1742 Oglethorpe had strengthened the fortifications on St. Simon's Island and at the mouth of the sound of that name.

BLOODY MARSH. On the 5th of July the Spanish fleet appeared off St. Simon's Sound, and forming in

Q. What reinforcements arrived? Give the state of affairs in Georgia and South Carolina. What opportunity was now offered Monteano? When was the attack to take place? What caused a delay at St. Augustine? Give the size of the Spanish force. What had General Oglethorpe done?

line of battle, ran in. Here they met a warm reception from the batteries on St. Simon's July 5 Island and from guns placed by General Oglethorpe on two vessels; but after an engagement lasting four hours the fleet passed these obstructions, and proceeded up the sound. The English commander then destroyed his batteries and hurried towards Frederica to defend it from the enemy, who soon landed some four thousand men and advanced in that direction. Within a few miles of the town Oglethorpe met them with his rangers, and, as he says in a letter, completely routed them; after which he posted his men under cover of a wood commanding a meadow through which the enemy had to pass, and then returned to Frederica for reinforcements. Hearing the noise of firing, he hurriedly rode back and met a platoon of men retreating in disorder; but riding further, he found that Lieutenants McKay and Sutherland had defeated a party of the enemy with great loss. The Spanish commander, Captain Don Antonio Barba, was taken prisoner, mortally wounded, and two hundred others were slain. From this brilliant episode the spot afterwards received the name of *Bloody Marsh*.

RETREAT OF THE SPANISH. General Oglethorpe now marched to the vicinity of the Spanish army, intending to make a night attack; but his plan was frustrated by the desertion of a Frenchman, who had accompanied the volunteers. With wonderful fore-

Q. Give the operations of the Spanish fleet on July 5. What resistance did they meet? Give their further movements and those of Oglethorpe. Tell of the rout near Frederica. Give an account of *Bloody Marsh*. What did Oglethorpe now plan? How was his plan frustrated?

thought the Georgia governor turned the incident to good account by the following trick: Selecting one of the Spanish prisoners, he offered him his liberty and a sum of money, if he would carry a letter to the Spanish camp to the Frenchman, which letter was written in French and purported to come from a friend. The letter directed him to tell Monteano of the weakness of the English, and to promise to act as a guide, by which means he would be able to lead the enemy under the woods where were hidden batteries. Failing in this, he should endeavor to hold the Spaniard for three days, since reinforcements were coming from South Carolina within that time. With the letter concealed on his person, the prisoner set out for the Spanish camp, where he was carried before Monteano, who inquired of him whether he had any letter, and on his denial had him searched, and found the paper, the very thing Oglethorpe had intended. The letter worked the desired effect; the Frenchman denied any knowledge of the writer, but notwithstanding he was looked on with suspicion. Monteano was much perplexed; and, fortunately for Oglethorpe, three vessels from Charleston appeared in the offing, which fact lent to the statement in the letter concerning reinforcements a coloring of truth. He determined to withdraw before it should be too late. Accordingly, leaving much military stores behind him in his haste, he reëmbarked his troops, and sailed off for St. Augustine, attacking on his way Fort

Q. Give an account of Oglethorpe's trick. What did the letter contain? Give an account of the prisoner in the Spanish camp. What effect did the letter have? How was Oglethorpe aided by fortune at this time? What showed Monteano's haste?

William on Cumberland Island, but without success. Thus did General Oglethorpe through his address and skill with less than seven hundred men baffle eight times as many Spaniards.

RAID OF GENERAL OGLETHORPE IN 1743. To have the last word in the dispute, as it were, General Oglethorpe in March, 1743, made a raid up to the gates of St. Augustine with a body of friendly March Creeks. Forming an ambush, he rode with a few men close to the walls of the fort, in order to draw the garrison out in pursuit; but the Spaniards were "meek as mice" and would not stir outside of their defenses. Having accomplished the object of his expedition, Oglethorpe then returned, going the whole distance of ninety-six miles in four days.

No more direct hostilities occurred between the Spaniards and their English neighbors, although the former continued to harbor runaway slaves, and to incite the Indians to commit depredations on Georgia settlers.

Q. What fort did he attack on his return? How did General Oglethorpe have the last word? Give an account of Oglethorpe before the walls of the fort. What hostilities occurred afterwards?

CHAPTER X.

CONDITION OF FLORIDA IN 1763—TRANSFER OF FLORIDA TO GREAT BRITAIN—EAST AND WEST FLORIDA.

PENSACOLA ON SANTA ROSA ISLAND. A short time after Bienville had given up the site of Pensacola in 1723, Metamoras returned bringing back the inhabitants; but the cautious old governor did not build again on the same spot. A



From Roberts' Florida.

PENSACOLA ON SANTA ROSA ISLAND, 1743.

new town was erected on the island of Santa Rosa, where there would be comparative safety from an attack by land. The position chosen for the insular Pensacola was somewhere near the

site of the present life-saving station. With the
1754 exception of a sketch drawn in 1743 by a
passing merchant, Don Serres, nothing is
known of the settlement until 1754, when a violent
hurricane destroyed the town, killing a portion of its
inhabitants.

REMOVAL TO THE MAINLAND: CONDITION IN 1763.
The survivors moved to the northern shore of the bay,
and began the present town of Pensacola on a crescent-
shaped piece of land formed by the harbor
1763 and a swamp. When the English nine years
later, in 1763, received Florida in exchange
for Cuba, Captain Wills was sent to occupy Pensacola.
In his report he has left a description of the town as it
then was.

Pensacola was a wretched little hamlet of forty huts,
"thatched with palmetto leaves, and barracks for a
small garrison, the whole surrounded by a
1763 stockade of pine posts". The woods around
the town had been scarcely cleared away
from the stockade, although there were a few miser-
able gardens. Cattle were obtained from Mobile,
which produced enough for export. Captain Wills
speaks of five nations of Indians dwelling in easy
reach of Pensacola.

ST. AUGUSTINE IN 1763. At the time of the Eng-
lish occupation, St. Augustine contained five thous-
and seven hundred people, white, black, mulattoes,
and Indians, of which the garrison constituted two

Q. When did the inhabitants of Pensacola return? Where
was the new town built? Give what is known of its history.
To what place did the survivors of the hurricane move the
town? Who has left a description of Pensacola in 1763?
Give the appearance of the town.

thousand five hundred. Within the town were nine hundred houses, commonly two stories high, with two rooms on a floor, large windows and balconies and flat roofs, and before the doors of most of them were porticoes of stone arches. There were three churches, and a Franciscan convent, which was turned by the new possessors into barracks for the soldiers. The streets of the town were regularly laid out, built narrow for the purpose of shade; and in the middle of the



From Roberts' Florida.

ST. AUGUSTINE IN 1763.

town was a square, with the governor's house on one side. St. Augustine was about half a mile in length, and was fortified by a wall and a ditch. To the north lay San Marcos, nearly in the condition it is now; to the west was a rampart with broad ditch and bastions, and further off another line with redoubts; near the town was a small German settlement; and not far away on the St. Marks River was an Indian village and a church of freestone built by the Indians.

OTHER SETTLEMENTS IN 1763. It was now nearly two hundred years since Menendez had massacred the French Huguenots and founded St. Augustine, but there were scarcely more than six or seven thousand Spaniards in Florida. These were grouped mainly in St. Augustine. Pensacola contained only a few hundred. Besides these towns, ham-
1763 lets, of a few inhabitants each, had been founded at St. Josephs and St. Marks on the Gulf coast, and at Picolata on the St. Johns River.

TRANSFER OF FLORIDA TO ENGLAND. In the French and Indian War (1754-1763) Spain was an ally of France against England. Towards
1762 the end of the war France saw that she was going to lose her possessions in America, and in 1762 ceded to her ally Spain all of Louisiana west of the Mississippi, with a small section of country on the eastern side of that river near its mouth. In this same year the English Admiral Pocock captured the Spanish city of Havana, the capital of Cuba,
1763 thereby isolating St. Augustine from the home government, on which it was depend-
18 ent. On the 18th of February a treaty between the three nations was concluded at Paris, by which France surrendered to England all

Q. Whence did Pensacola obtain its supplies of cattle? How many nations of Indians were said to be dwelling near Pensacola? Give St. Augustine's population. Describe its houses. The streets and square. Give the size of the town. Mention the fortifications and settlements nearby. How long had St. Augustine been founded? What was the population of Florida in 1763? Name the Spanish settlements in Florida.

Louisiana east of the Mississippi, except the small strip ceded to Spain. England, anxious to round out her American possessions, exchanged Havana for Florida. On the 7th of August Captain Wills of the British navy arrived at Pensacola, and presented to the Spanish commander an order for its surrender, which was promptly complied with. Transports arrived on the 2nd of September, when every one, man, woman, and child left for Mexico, preferring not to live under protestant rule. The nineteenth article of the treaty had, however, guaranteed to all who would remain the right to worship according to the Catholic faith, and to possess their personal property; but it had also been agreed that those who wished to leave might do so. Captain Wills was left in complete and undisturbed possession of the town.

About the same time Major Ogilvie received St. Augustine for the king of England; and here, as at Pensacola, the population departed in a body, only five persons remaining. More of the inhabitants might have remained, had not the English commander behaved harshly towards them, which so exasperated them that if he had not put forth every effort, not a house would have remained uninjured in St. August-

Q. Who were against England in the French and Indian War? What did France cede to Spain? Why? What capture did Admiral Pocock make? Tell about the Treaty of Paris. Who received the surrender of Pensacola? What became of the Spanish population? What was guaranteed them by the nineteenth article of the treaty? Who received the surrender of St. Augustine?

tine. As it was, the governor's fine garden was destroyed, and the people at their departure sold the houses and lands, not only of the city but of the entire country, to a few men who remained behind for the purpose of making the purchase.

EAST AND WEST FLORIDA. Owing to the size of the new province of Florida the English king was afraid to allow it to continue as a whole, and Oct. 3 divided it into two parts, East and West Florida, separated from each other by the Apalachicola River. The partition was made October 7, 1763, as follows:

East Florida should be the Peninsula, bounded on the west by the Gulf of Mexico and the Apalachicola River; on the north by a line running from the juncture of the Flint and Chattahoochee Rivers to the source of the St. Mary's, and down this to the ocean; on the eastward and southward by the Atlantic Ocean and the Gulf of Florida, including all islands within six leagues of the coast. St. Augustine was to be the capital.

West Florida was to include the islands within six miles of the coast between the Apalachicola and Lake Pontchartrain, and the mainland bounded westward by the said lake, Lake Maurepas, and the Mississippi as far north as the thirty-first parallel of latitude, which running east to the Chattahoochee was to form the northern boundary. This last mentioned river to

Q. How many persons remained in St. Augustine? Why did not more remain? What did the inhabitants do with their houses and lands? Why did the king of England divide Florida into East and West Florida? Bound East Florida. Give its capital. Bound West Florida.

CHAPTER XI.

FLORIDA UNDER BRITISH RULE—INDUCEMENTS TO SETTLERS—DR. TURNBULL'S COLONY AT NEW SMYRNA—REPRESENTATIVE GOVERNMENT—REVOLUTIONARY WAR—PANTON, LESLIE AND CO.—ALEXANDER MCGILLIVRAY.

INDUCEMENTS TO SETTLERS. As is customary with new settlements, pamphlets were issued in England reciting the advantages of Florida; newspapers published letters setting forth its salubrious climate and extolling the fertility of its soil; and even larger works with engraved illustrations appeared. Officers of the last war, the French and Indian War, could on application receive a grant of land varying from two hundred to five thousand acres, according to each man's rank; privates, disbanded in America and residing there, would be entitled to fifty acres. These lands were to be held without fee for ten years, after which they would be on the same footing as the other lands of the province. Excellent roads were constructed. These, known as the "king's roads", are still in use, the one especially designated as King's Road from St. Augustine to Coleraine on the St. Mary's
1765 being built in 1765 by the liberality of private gentlemen. Bounties were offered on indigo, which at that period brought a high price in London;

Q. What works were issued descriptive of Florida? What amount of land was offered to officers and privates of the last war? How were the lands to be held? Give an account of the "king's roads".

on turpentine, ten shillings for each barrel shipped from Florida, and on other commodities.

GOVERNOR JAMES GRANT, 1763-1771. The first governor of East Florida, James Grant, arrived at St.

Augustine in the latter part of 1763, and on 1763 the 7th of October issued a proclamation 1771 setting forth the advantages of his province, Oct. 7 and inviting settlers. For the entire period

of his governorship he was indefatigable in his efforts to promote the welfare of his people, just in his dealings with them, and skilful in reconciling contending parties. His faith in England led him during the Revolutionary War to imagine that five thousand British troops could march unmolested from one end of the American continent to the other through the revolted colonies, for which he received much ridicule. He had one fault, that of so many other colonial governors, the love of money.

GEORGE JOHNSTONE, GOVERNOR OF WEST FLORIDA, 1764-1766. Civil government began in West

Florida with the arrival, February, 1764, of Com-

1764 dore George Johnstone, who had been ap-
Feb. pointed as governor of that province with his residence in Pensacola. Settlers began to

come in large numbers owing to his publishing descriptions of the territory; and the town was laid out into streets and squares. But Governor Johnstone lacked tact; and in consequence soon found him-

Q. What bounties were offered? What was Governor Grant's policy towards settlers? How did he care for the province? What force did he think could subdue the revolted colonies (*in the Revolutionary War*)? Name his fault. Who was first governor of West Florida? How did he promote the colony's welfare?

self at odds with the military department. This disagreement divided the colonists into two hostile camps, which rendered the office of the governor so unpleasant, that he resigned in December, 1766. A Scot by birth, he resented strongly every slur cast on that name. Grant in East Florida was also a Scotchman. On one occasion the *North Briton* having spoken sarcastically of the two as a brace of Scotchmen, Johnstone became so angry that meeting Mr. Brooks, who was connected with that publication, he drew his sword to run him through, but was prevented by the bystanders. During the Revolutionary War Johnstone came to America as a commissioner to endeavor to reconcile the colonies to the mother country; but he rendered himself so obnoxious by his attempts at bribery, that Congress refused to have anything to do with him. The lieutenant-governor, Monteforte Brown, by virtue of his office became governor on the resignation of Johnstone.

UPBUILDING OF PENSACOLA. Soon after the arrival of Governor Johnstone, Elias Dunford, surveyor of the province, surveyed and laid out Pensacola into blocks and squares, each lot for building purposes corresponding to a garden lot on the edge of the town. Facing the main street, named George street in honor of George III, king of England, was a large park running eastward to Charlotte street, so called for Queen Charlotte, and in the centre of the town was erected a star-shaped fort with officers' quarters and barracks. George street was carried through the swamp back of

Q. Give the reason for his resignation. What was he by birth?

the town to the foot of an eminence, which received the name of Gage Hill, in honor of General Gage of Boston fame. When Peter Chester was commissioned governor of West Florida in 1772, he set about strengthening the fortifications of Pensacola, and, discarding the old star-fort, had another larger and stronger defense built on Gage Hill, known as Fort George under British rule, but called St. Michael by



From Roberts' Florida.

PENSACOLA BAY IN 1763.

the Spaniards after 1783. In the centre of Fort George was the council chamber and other offices where the business of the colony was transacted.

Below the town at Tartar Point, now the site of the

Q. Relate the *North Briton* incident. In what capacity did Johnstone come to America? Who succeeded him? What did Elias Dunford do for Pensacola? Give the names of two streets. What defenses did Pensacola have? Where was Gage Hill? What fort took the place of the Star fort? What rooms were there in the fort? Where was Tartar Point? What was its Spanish name?

Navy Yard, and which during the second Spanish occupation was known as Punta de la Asta Bandera, *Point of the Flag-staff*, a battery and barracks were erected. Two batteries, "one on the top and the other at the foot of the hill", were planted at Red Cliff, a position which has been with great certainty identified with Barrancas. Here were also barracks and quarters for the officers, so constructed as to be able to resist an attack from Indians.

When Captain Wills received the surrender of Pensacola, he reported, as will be remembered, that it was a wretched hamlet of forty huts, and that the woods around it were scarcely cut away. This was now all changed. In 1765 scurvy broke out among the soldiers, which brought to the governor's attention the necessity of raising vegetables. In consequence, much of the swamp was cleared and drained, and was cultivated in gardens, which in process of time extended far to the westward of the town. This district is still free from large trees, and presents many traces of the cultivation of over one hundred years ago. Pensacola itself took on a different appearance, a change which came about during Governor Chester's administration, and will be best described when his period is reached.

NEW SMYRNA. Of the many colonies planted in East Florida during British rule, the most interesting is one established at Mosquito Inlet by an association formed in London, at the head of which was a Scotchman, Dr. Andrew Turnbull. A number of
1766 immigrants from the Bermuda Islands had already settled there in 1766, attracted by the fine live-oak growing in that region, which was

well suited for ship-building. In fact the large quantity of ship timber in Florida was considered by the British as one of the great advantages possessed by the province. The soil around Mosquito Inlet was rich and productive, and below the frost-line; the section of the country was healthy; fish and oysters abounded in the neighboring waters;—these, and many other features rendered it a desirable spot for a colony. It was imagined that the best way to develop its natural resources would be by means of settlers obtained from the counties bordering on the Mediterranean Sea, since, living in a similar climate, they could transplant to Florida the fruits, etc., of their own countries. Accordingly, Sir William Duncan and Dr. Turnbull secured after the expenditure of one hundred and sixty-six thousand dollars some fifteen hundred colonists from Smyrna, Greeks, Italians, and Minorcans. A settlement was begun ~~on~~ Mosquito Inlet, and named New Smyrna, for the town from which the colonists had come. These were indentured. They were required to work a certain number of years to pay for their passage and support, but were then to be free, and to receive grants of land proportionate to the size of the families.

Canals and ditches for irrigation, and other permanent improvements, among them a stone wharf, were

Q. Give the fortifications at Tartar Point. Give those at Red Cliff. What was the condition of Pensacola when Captain Wills received its surrender? Why was cultivation of the soil begun? Give an account of the gardens. What is the most interesting colony planted in East Florida? Who was at its head? Why had settlers already occupied Mosquito Inlet? What did the British consider a great feature of Florida?

constructed at the cost of much labor and expense. Indigo and sugar cane, especially the former, were the chief articles cultivated. Everything was conducted systematically, and the colony is said to have been a success. The net value of the first crop of indigo amounted to three thousand dollars.

OTHER SETTLEMENTS. The proclamation of Governor Grant and the policy of the British government brought from South Carolina many influential planters, among whom were Major Moultrie, afterwards governor of the province, and William Drayton, subsequently chief justice of East Florida. At the same time, in England Lords Hawke, Egmont, Greenville, and Hillsborough secured large grants of land, which were improved by agents sent out with suitable means. Dennis Rolle, Esq., father of Lord Rolle, set out in 1765 with one hundred families to settle a grant of four thousand acres near St. Marks, but driven by stress of weather to seek safety in the St. Johns River, he decided to remain, and on its banks above Palatka, but on the eastern side, started a settlement at Rollstown under the name Charlottia. Subsequently, most of the colonists moved to Carolina, owing to the breaking up of the colony on account of the bad management of Mr. Rolle's agents. A large plantation was begun at Beresford on the upper St. Johns, and

Q. Mention the good points of Mosquito Inlet. How was it imagined that a colony could be best planted? What colonists were secured? Give the name of the new colony. What was required of the colonists? What works were constructed? Give the crops chiefly cultivated. What did the first crop of indigo net? Who moved to East Florida from South Carolina?

another at Spring Garden. The Scotch settlement in this district removed to Georgia at the solicitation of the McIntoshes.

SOCIAL LIFE IN PENSACOLA. Governor Brown was to act as governor of West Florida only 1767 until a successor of Governor Johnstone July could be appointed. In July, 1767, a certain Mr. Elliot was commissioned governor, but he seems never to have entered on the performance of his duties, although his arrival was expected for several years, and orders were given to have the governor's residence in readiness for his occupation.

The post of governor at Pensacola could not have been a pleasant one, since the correspondence of this period from that town declares that "Pensacola has been justly famed for vexatious law suits. It is so contrived, indeed, that if a poor man owes but five pounds, and has not got so much ready money, or if he disputes some dollars of imposition, that may be in the account, or if he is guilty of shaking his fist at any rascal that has abused him, he is sure to be prosecuted, and the costs in every suit are about seven pounds sterling". The writer then goes on to speak of corruption in high places, and ends the first part of his tirade: "I have known this province for little more than four years, yet I could name to you a set of men who may brag of one governor resigned, one horsewhip-

Q. What English lords secured grants in East Florida? Give an account of Dennis Rolle's attempt to settle in the same province. Mention other settlements. How long was Brown to act as governor of West Florida? Give what is known of Mr. Elliott. What reputation does a writer give to Pensacola? Mention some of his further remarks about law suits.

ped, and one whom they led by the nose and supported while it suited their purpose, and then betrayed". Who the third governor is has not been discovered, although the writer, writing in 1770, before the appointment of Governor Chester, speaks of the "late worthy Lieutenant-Governor". Another correspondent tells his friend that Pensacola had few "gentlemen, who are very much wanted". But these surely are one-sided opinions; they have the ring of some disappointed litigant or dyspeptic invalid.

GOVERNOR CHESTER, 1770-1781. Pensacola was now to enjoy a wave of prosperity greater than at any subsequent period of the same duration prior 1770 to the Civil War. A new governor, Peter 1781 Chester, a man of experience and capacity, arrived in 1770, and at once infused a spirit 1770 of reform and progress into the affairs of the territory. As the tide of revolution swept with increasing force over the northern colonies, the two Floridas, enjoying repose, became the refuge and home for large numbers of Tories, who were forced to emigrate from the revolted districts. The majority of refugees settled in East Florida, though many grants of land were made in the western province, mostly along the courses of streams. A large number of negro slaves were also imported. Commerce was chiefly represented by Panton, Leslie & Co.,

Q. What treatment did the governors receive? What class of people does one writer say was needed in Pensacola? How does the prosperity in Chester's administration compare with any subsequent period? Give the date of his arrival. What caused a tide of immigration to come to Florida? Where did the majority of the immigrants settle? What class of people were imported?

who engaged in trade with the neighboring Indian tribes. We hear also of an export trade in pine timber and lumber, cedar, staves, shingles, beef, hides, fish, honey, beeswax, myrtle-wax from the berries of the wild myrtle. Besides this source of prosperity, the British government expended annually during the last years of English occupation two hundred thousand pounds in improvements, since it had determined to make Pensacola a great naval station for the control of the Gulf of Mexico. A site for a navy yard was selected westward of the town.

An old traveller, William Bartram, tells of the governor's "stone palace, with a cupola built by the Spaniards", and of his farm to which he took morning rides in "his chariot"; but the naturalist's imagination certainly colored and enlarged his excellency's more modest residence and equipage, for not even tradition knows anything concerning a "stone palace" or a "chariot". However, there were many substantial dwellings of wood and brick constructed at this time, several of which were standing half a century ago. But of a church nothing is said. Indeed, the only preacher in all West Florida during British rule was a German chaplain of a Waldeck regiment stationed at Mobile. There is one house deserving special notice, a white double-storied building on the bluff west of Pensacola, which the English spoke of as the "white house", the Spanish as "Casa Blanca". The owner,

Q. What trade was engaged in? Name some of the exports. Give the annual expenditures of the British government. What did it intend to make of Pensacola? What site was selected? Give an account of the governor's "stone palace" and his "chariot". When were some of the buildings then erected standing? How many churches and preachers were there in West Florida?

a man of wealth, and his child breathed their last here, leaving the wife and mother to be driven away from her home by the return of the Spanish in 1783.

REPRESENTATIVE GOVERNMENT. The governor of the two Floridas had been empowered to summon General Assemblies in the manner and form directed in those colonies in America directly under the king's government. Laws were to be made by the governor, with the consent of his council and of the representatives of the people. Until the governor should deem the province capable of governing itself, he was to be

vested with the law-making power, in connection with his council. In 1773 Governor

Chester thought that the time was come for him to call an Assembly. Accordingly, he had notices distributed through his province setting forth the qualification of voters and representatives, as well as the number of the latter, the voting precincts, the time for holding the election, and the day on which the Assembly should meet at Pensacola. But the term of office had been unhappily fixed at three years, which was too long in the opinion of the people, who expressed themselves on the ballot as favoring a term of one year. They persisting in their objection to three years, and the governor refusing to grant the single-year term, no General Assembly was ever held in West Florida—the fault of the people rather than of Governor Chester, for after they had secured the law-mak-

ing power, they could through their representatives have fixed the term to suit themselves. The first popular Assembly in East

Florida was held in January, 1781. Here, however,

Q. Tell of the "white house." What power was given the governors?

the people forced Governor Tonym to give them representative government, as will be seen later.

GOVERNOR MOULTRIE, 1771-1774: GOVERNOR TONYN, 1774-1783. One of the immigrants from South Carolina was Major Moultrie, a brother of General Moultrie of Revolutionary fame. Major Moultrie was appointed lieutenant-governor to Grant, and on the resignation of the latter succeeded to the office of governor. Soon he and Chief-Justice Drayton, who refused to yield to Governor Moultrie the deference due him in his new position, were so at variance in matters relating to public affairs that the chief-justice was suspended from office by the governor. He endeavored to secure reinstatement, but failed, owing to his republican sympathies; and afterwards went to South Carolina, where he bore a conspicuous part in the struggle of the colonies for freedom. Major Moultrie was succeeded in 1774

1774 by Patrick Tonym, who filled the office of governor as long as East Florida remained a part of England's possessions. On his arrival he issued a proclamation offering protection to the loyalists of the neighboring colonies who should come to Florida; and it is said that considerable numbers accepted the invitation, and settled on plantations around St. Augustine.

Q. How were laws made in the province? When did Governor Chester call an Assembly? What notices were sent out? Give the cause of no meeting of an Assembly. Why was it the people's fault? When was an Assembly held in East Florida? Who was here in the opposition? Whence did Major Moultrie come? What position did he hold in East Florida? Why were he and Chief Justice Drayton soon at variance?

CAPTURE OF THE "BETSEY". A very exasperating occurrence to the authorities at St. Augustine took place in August, 1775. At the very mouth of the harbor of the city the "Betsey", a British vessel from London, carrying one hundred and eleven barrels of powder, was overhauled by a privateer from Charleston, and unloaded in sight of the warships at anchor in the bay and of the garrison of Fort St. John. Colonel Brown, a famous partisan leader during the Revolution, was despatched with a company of irregulars and a band of Indians to retaliate by a descent on the frontier settlements of Georgia. Privateers were also fitted out, and a fort built for their protection on the banks of the St. Mary's.

REVOLUTIONARY WAR. Florida was too new a possession, and the people had been too well treated, for dissatisfaction to exist such as there was in the other American colonies. In consequence East and West Florida remained quietly under British rule during the Revolutionary War, although Spain drove the English out of the latter in 1781.

Many loyalists, as already seen, made their homes in one or the other of the two Floridas. When the Declaration of Independence was heard of in St. Augustine, effigies of John Adams and of John Hancock were burned in the Plaza where the monument now stands.

Q. What became of Mr. Drayton? Who succeeded Major Moultrie? What proclamation did he offer? With what effect? Give an account of the capture of the "Betsey". How did Colonel Brown retaliate? Why did not the Revolution extend to Florida?

East Florida, at the outbreak of hostilities, assumed importance as a basis of operations; and the inhabitants were enrolled as militia, in addition to the rangers, who were considered as regulars. The militia was called out in 1776 not only to repel invasion, but also "to prevent any more infatuated men from joining their *traitorous neighbours*", as Governor Tonyn denominated the inhabitants of the revolted colonies. President Gwinnet of Georgia answered by offering protection to those who "would join the American standard, in opposition to tyranny". It would appear that men from Florida had joined their "traitorous neighbors".

INVASION OF GEORGIA. Just after this, preparations were made in Georgia to invade East Florida, but for some reason the invasion never took place. The arrival of reinforcements at St. Augustine put the British in a condition not only to defend themselves, but to carry the war into the enemy's territory, and accordingly an expedition was fitted out under Colonel Fuser, of the Sixtieth Regiment, who marched into Georgia with five hundred infantry and several pieces of artillery. Attacking Sunbury, he was repulsed, and was compelled to retire to Florida for reinforcements.

NEW SMYRNA BROKEN UP. Two years after the foundation of the settlement at New Smyrna an insurrection broke out on account of the severe punish-

Q. Tell of the burning of the effigies of Adams and Hancock. Why did East Florida now become important? Give its military force. Why was the militia called out in 1776? What answer did President Gwinnet make? What appears from this? What preparations were made in Georgia? Give an account of Colonel Fuser's expedition.

ment of some of its members. Several of the ring-leaders were carried to St. Augustine, where
1769 five were condemned to death; but of these two were pardoned by the governor, and a
1776 third given his liberty on condition of executing the remaining two. By 1776 the number of colonists was reduced from fifteen hundred to six hundred. On this year they sent a commission of two to St. Augustine to lay before the attorney-general, Mr. Yonge, a petition stating their grievances, and praying that they should be released from their indentures and servitude to the proprietors. Whether Dr. Turnbull was guilty of the cruelties practiced on the settlers at Mosquito Inlet, as they declared, cannot be established, as a man of his influence and standing in the province—for it was expected in 1771 that he would succeed Governor Grant—would scarcely commit the enormities ascribed to him. However that may be, the petition was granted. Liberal offers were then made them to remain, but the remembrance of the hardships and sickness suffered was too strong, and so all removed to St. Augustine, where homes were assigned them in the northern part of the city, and where their descendants still reside. To Dr. Turnbull the whole transaction must have been pure loss, as the colony was not yet on a paying foundation.

WILLIAM PANTON. Among the loyalists who moved to Florida during the Revolutionary War was an Indian trader from Charleston, William Panton, a native of Aberdeenshire, Scotland. He came to this country at an early age and settled at Charleston, where he built up an extensive trade with the Indians of South Carolina and Georgia. But at the outbreak of the

war with England he was driven from the colonies, and his estates in Georgia and South Carolina were confiscated. Pantou then settled on the St. Mary's, and as the senior of the firm of Pantou, Leslie & Co., which had an establishment in London and branches in the West Indies, he afterwards set up trading-houses

at St. Augustine, at Pensacola, and at Chica-
1781 saw Bluff on the Mississippi. When the Spaniards got possession of Pensacola in 1781, they found him residing there, and conducting a large business from that point. Although other merchants came in, his firm sought Indian trade alone, and, this growing from year to year, in a short time controlled the entire trade not only of the Indians in West Florida but of all the tribes south of the Tennessee River. Owing to Pantou's influence over the Indians, the Spaniards were anxious to retain him in the province, and made with him a special treaty exempting him from the restrictions placed upon other foreigners. At one time it is said the Spanish government was indebted to him to the extent of two hundred thousand dollars. He himself owned fifteen trading schooners. After he became a subject
1804 of Spain, they suffered much from the English cruisers at that time preying on Spanish commerce. His death occurred in 1804, and after this the Americans succeeded in attracting much of

Q. Why was there an insurrection at New Smyrna? Tell of the execution of the ringleaders. How many colonists were there in 1776? Give their petition. What can be said of Dr. Turnbull? What became of the colonists? How was Dr. Turnbull affected by the breaking up of the colony? From what country did William Pantou come? Where did he settle? What trade did he engage in?

the Indian trade, which previously they had not been able to do. The firm of Panton, Leslie & Co. was carried on under the name of John Forbes & Co.

ALEXANDER MCGILLIVRAY. The canny Scotch trader won his influence among the Indians in a great measure by his power over the head man of the Creeks, Alexander McGillivray, one of the most remarkable of the Indian chiefs America has produced. His father, Lachlan McGillivray, came over from Scotland as a boy, and, falling in with Indian traders at Charleston, accompanied them on their expeditions to the Indian country, where in a few years he became one of the boldest of the traders. On one of his expeditions he wooed and won a beautiful Indian maid, Sehoj Marchand, the daughter of a French officer and a Creek woman of the powerful Wind family. Before Alexander was born, his mother dreamed of piles of papers and manuscripts, such as she had seen when as a girl she had visited her father in Fort Toulouse. At the age of fourteen the boy was placed in school at Charleston; from here he was transferred to his father's counting house at Savannah. But Alexander was more fond of study than of business. So on the advice of friends his father sent him back to Charleston, and in a few years the boy, now a man, became a good scholar; but his thoughts constantly turned to

Q. Which side did Panton take in the Revolutionary War? How did he afterwards extend his trade? Where did he take up his residence? Give an account of his firm's trade. Why did the Spaniards retain him? How much did Spain owe him at one time? Why were his schooners attacked by English cruisers? Who secured a share of the Indian trade after his death. How was he able to gain influence among the Indians?

his kindred and his people. One day he suddenly left Charleston. The next that is heard of him is 1776 that he had been presiding over a council of the Creek nation at Coweta, on the Chattahoochee. His arrival was most opportune, for the Creeks were distracted by the attempts to make them take the British or American side of the coming contest. Alexander McGillivray was distinctly a diplomatist. The office of Grand Tustenuggee, or Leader of the Creek Forces, he bestowed on a Frenchman, Leclerc Milfort, who married his sister Jeannette. McGillivray nominally espoused the cause of the British, who made of him a colonel with full pay, but though mindful of his own aggrandizement, he carefully fostered his people; and so when the Revolutionary War ended, the Creek Confederacy was more powerful than it had ever been, for he never allowed the Creeks to engage in the war, except in very small numbers, nor so to compromise themselves as not to be able to make terms with the other side. In the years before his death he was accused of duplicity, and fell under suspicion, as he had been made by Washington a brigadier-general with the salary of twelve hundred dollars a year, and at the same time he was a colonel in the Spanish service and their agent to the 1792 Creek nation, drawing an annual salary of thirty-five hundred dollars. While at Pensacola working to reestablish his power, death overtook

Q. Give an account of Lachlan McGillivray. Of Sehoy Marchand. What dream did she have? Relate the story of young Alexander's school days. Tell of his return to his people. Why was it opportune? Why did he make Milfort leader of the Creek forces? Which side of the Revolutionary War did he espouse? How did he guard his people?

him in 1792, in the forty-ninth year of his age. He was interred with masonic honors in William Panton's garden, and a wail went up from the Creek nation for the Great Chieftain, who "lay buried in the sands of the Seminoles". Well might they mourn, for now was their country to be filled with war and bloodshed.

INDIAN TRADERS. Standing by the trail that runs north from Pensacola, one might at almost any time in the end of the last century have beheld a long line of ponies, small but hardy, a driver to every ten. These were the pack-horses of Indian traders. Each carried a load of one hundred and eighty pounds of merchandise, or, maybe, several kegs of mean rum called taffai, which was drunk by the driver as well as by the savage customers. Every night the party camped out, and the ponies were let loose to graze, for there was no fear of the Indians, who regarded the traders as their best friends. Rivers were crossed by canoes, or, when these were wanting, by rafts made of cane or logs. After the wares had been disposed of, the ponies were loaded again, this time with products of the chase or of Indian industry, skins of various kinds, beeswax, hickory-nut oil, snake-root, and other medicinal plants, which were carried to Pensacola or other points, whence they reached the markets of the world.

Q. Why was McGillivray accused of duplicity? When and where did his death take place? Where was he buried? Why might the Creeks mourn? What could one have seen at the end of the last century? Give the load carried by a pack horse. Tell of the encampment and the crossing of rivers. Mention some of the wares obtained from the Indians.

CHAPTER XII.

BRITISH RULE IN FLORIDA, CONTINUED—"OLD RORY"—DON BERNARDO DE GALVEZ CAPTURES PENSACOLA—BAHAMA ISLANDS SEIZED—RETRANSFER OF FLORIDA TO SPAIN.

"OLD RORY." During the years 1777 and 1778 a large number of loyalists moved into Florida from Georgia and the Carolinas. Among those 1777-8 who came in the former year was the eccentric Captain Roderick McIntosh, familiarly termed "Old Rory", who had been with the Highlanders at Fort Moosa in 1740 at the time of Oglethorpe's invasion. He was now sixty-five years old, six feet tall and striding four feet at each step, of ruddy complexion, and with a head of "white, frizzled and bushy" hair. Though not rich, he cared nothing for money. It is said that he once drove a herd of cattle to St. Augustine, and, having sold them for gold, put the money in a bag on his horse, and set out for home. On the way the bag came open and spilled a number of dollars, whereupon he merely fastened the canvas, paying no attention to the pieces on the ground. Years afterwards when in need of money he returned to the spot, and picked up what he wanted.

"He was fond of dogs. He once laid a considerable bet that he could hide a doubloon, at three miles dis-

Q. What eccentric loyalist came to Florida in 1777? When had he been there before? Describe him. Tell the story of the spilled gold coins. What bet did he make concerning his dog?

tance, and that his setter, which he had taught to take his back track, would find it. *Lauth* presently went off on his trail, was gone some time, and returned panting, with his tongue out, but came without the doubloon. '*Treason*'! vociferated 'Rory', as he walked rapidly to the place where he had hidden the money. He turned over the log, and found that *Lauth* had torn up the earth in search of it. A man was seen, some distance off, engaged in the splitting of rails. Without ceremony, 'Rory' drew his dirk, advanced upon him, and swore he would put him to death if he did not give up the doubloon. The man, very much alarmed, immediately handed him the coin, observing that, having seen *McIntosh* put something under the log, he had gone to the place and found the gold. 'Rory', tossing him back the money, said, 'take it, vile caitiff, it was not the pelf, but the honor of my dog I cared for'".

In St. Augustine "Rory" marched about the streets accompanied by his Scotch piper, both clad in the Highland costume.

Once he rode from St. Augustine to Savannah, and in an excited manner asked his friend *Cowper* for money to pay his expenses to Charleston. With some difficulty *Cowper* learned the cause of his excitement. "That reptile in Charleston, *Gadsden*," he cried, "has insulted my country, and I will put him to death." "What has he done?" asked his friend. "Why, on being asked how he meant to fill up his wharf, in Charleston, he replied, 'by imported Scotchmen, who were fit for nothing better.'" His friends finally prevailed on him to overlook the insult and to return home.

In December, 1778, General *Provost* advanced from

St. Augustine with part of the garrison, for the purpose of joining the British forces on their way from New York to attack Savannah. One of his captains was Roderick McIntosh.

1778
Dec. Arriving before Sunbury, commanded by Colonel John McIntosh, "Rory", having imbibed too freely, insisted on going out alone, and demanding the surrender of the fort. In the early morning he advanced, claymore in hand, followed by his faithful servant Jim, and near the gate shouted in a commanding tone, "Surrender, you miscreants! how dare you presume to resist his majesty's arms!" Colonel McIntosh threw open the gate, and said, "Walk in, cousin, and take possession." "No!" he indignantly replied, "I will not trust myself with such vermin; but I order you to surrender." A ball from a rifle struck him in the face and he fell; but immediately he recovered, and retreated backwards, flourishing his sword. Jim implored his master to run. He replied, "Run, yourself, poor slave; but I am of a race that never runs." Still brandishing his sword, he backed safely into the lines, his face at all times to the enemy.

Many distinguished persons in Georgia and Alabama were connected with his family.

DISAGREEMENT AND JEALOUSY. Owing to disagreement among the officers, sickness among the men, and lack of supplies, an attack on Florida proposed by Governor Houston of Georgia in 1778 proved a failure. The force raised in

Q. Complete the story of *Lauth* and the piece of gold. In what manner did "Rory" march on the streets of St. Augustine? Tell the story of Gadsden's insult to his country. Why did General Provost advance to Savannah? Who was one of his captains?

St. Augustine to repel the invasion failed for the same reason that the Georgians had done nothing. Colonel Fuser, the British commander, contented himself with building a fort at St. Johns Bluff. Had the Americans made the attack, it would probably have proved successful, the English were weak and divided in counsels, and were, moreover, alarmed by the death of Captain Skinner, Deputy Superintendent of Indian Affairs, and a bold and skilful officer.

DISTINGUISHED CAROLINIANS AT ST. AUGUSTINE.

1780 After the fall of Charleston in 1780 sixty-one of the most respectable of the citizens of South Carolina were transferred to St. Augustine as prisoners of state.* Many indignities were heaped upon them, though they were paroled, and allowed the freedom of the city. As the British had broken the first parole in taking them to St. Augustine, General Gadsden refused a second from so perfidious a power, and bore close confinement for forty-two weeks. The prisoners were told tales of battles lost by the "rebels", and were informed on high authority that the blood of the unfortunate Major André would be required of them. "To have any friendly intercourse with them is considered as a mark of disrespect to his majesty and displeasing to me," says Gov-

Q. Give an account of "Rory" before Sunbury. Why did Governor Houston's proposed invasion of Florida prove a failure? Why did the British do nothing? With what did Colonel Fuser content himself? Give reasons for supposing that an attack of the Americans would have been successful.

* Fairbanks, *Hist. of Fla.*, p. 230, apparently gives their names, but in reality gives only fifty-six. Those omitted are, John Loveday, William Livingstone, Dr. David Ramsay, General Jacob Reed, Philip Smith. Cf. Forbes, *Sketches, Hist. and Topog. of the Floridas*, p. 32.

ernor Tonyn in an official letter. Such treatment rather gained them friends than otherwise.

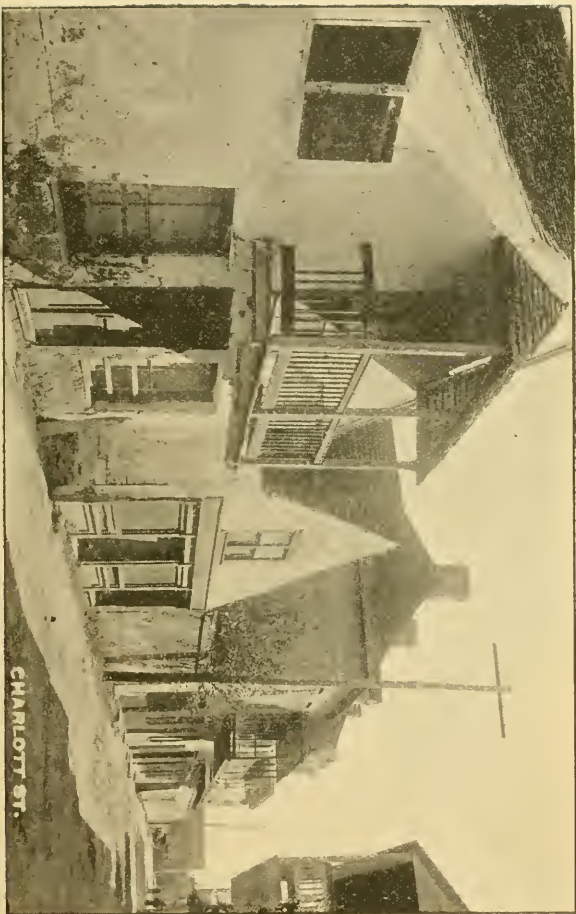
1781 Finally in 1781 they were sent to Philadelphia and exchanged in a general exchange of prisoners.

GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF EAST FLORIDA. We have already seen that in 1773 Governor Chester endeavored to create a General Assembly in West

1773 Florida, but that, owing to the opposition to a term of three years, no representative government was formed. In East Florida the governors had not issued writs for the election of assemblymen, until in 1780 public opinion in favor of a General Assembly became so strong that Governor Tonyn was compelled much against his will to declare a popular election. The first meeting was held in De-

1780 cember, 1780. There was no revolutionary Dec. spirit manifest, as the only business transacted was with reference to a constitution and certain local laws. The governor delivered an address before the Assembly congratulating it on the state of prosperity in the province, especially during his term of office. "Of late, gentlemen," he said, "the increase of property, from your success in commerce and planting, has been considerable; and the industry and judgment of a few may evince to Great Britain, that ample returns in produce may be made for money laid out in raising a produce equally beneficial to the

Q. What prisoners were brought to St. Augustine? How were they treated? Give the conduct of General Gadsden. Give a further account of their treatment. What effect did it have? How were they finally released? Why had Governor Chester failed to create representative government in West Florida? Tell of the General Assembly in East Florida.



ANCIENT BUILDINGS, ST. AUGUSTINE.

Cox, St. Augustine.

planter and the mother country, in one of the most healthy and fertile climates upon earth." This has a different ring from his letter to Lord Germaine previous to the calling of the General Assembly, in which he states that the cry for a legislature was as loud as ever, and that suggestions were thrown out that without it people's property was insecure. "But mention," he continues, "the expediency, propriety, reasonableness, justice and gratitude of imposing taxes for the expenses of government, they are all silent, or so exceedingly poor as not to be able to pay the least farthing."

PROSPERITY IN EAST FLORIDA. The introduction of the experienced planters from South Carolina had given a great impulse to the prosperity of the colony of East Florida, under the fostering care of the home government. Commerce steadily increased. During 1770 fifty coastwise schooners entered the port of St. Augustine, besides several vessels from London and Liverpool. Florida indigo brought the highest price of any in the London market. In 1772 forty thousand pounds were exported, which besides bringing a good price earned for the owners a handsome bounty. Seven years later forty thousand barrels of naval stores left the province, valued in St. Augustine at thirty-six shillings per barrel, in addition to which the government paid

Q. When did the Assembly hold its first meeting? What business was transacted? Give the governor's address. What did he say of the people in his letter to Lord Germaine? How was an impulse given to the prosperity of East Florida? Give the vessels visiting St. Augustine in 1770. Tell about the raising of indigo.

a bounty of ten shillings. Among the firms conducting a trade with the Indians were Panton and Leslie, Spalding, Kelsull, McLatchie, Swanson, and McGilivray and Strother. The forests yielded an almost inexhaustible supply of timber, while the farmer raised for home use, or for sale, sugar cane, cotton, rice, oranges, lemons, figs, grapes, bananas, and pineapples. No better testimony for the healthiness of the climate is needed than the statement that, during the entire period of British occupation, there were but ten doctors in all East Florida. But it is proper to place beside these evidences of prosperity the expenditures of the home government. During the last three years of English rule in West Florida over four hundred thousand pounds were spent in carrying on the affairs of the province. For the same period in East Florida the expenses were one hundred and thirty-five thousand pounds, which is more than the total value of exports from the province for the same time.

Though the province was in a prosperous condition, yet Sir Guy Carleton in 1780 ordered the 1780 evacuation of East Florida. His order was, however, not carried out on account of the remonstrance against such a step.

WAR BETWEEN ENGLAND AND SPAIN: ATTACK ON WEST FLORIDA. As the revolutionary war progressed in the northern colonies, England feeling that

Q. Give the naval stores shipped from East Florida in 1779. Mention some of the trading houses. Give some of the products of the soil. What good testimony is there for the healthiness of the country? What were the governmental expenses of East and West Florida? Give Sir Guy Carleton's order in 1780 concerning East Florida.

West Florida was secure drew off the garrisons from the different forts, until by the latter part of 1778 only five hundred men remained in the whole province. But at this time, having her suspicions aroused by the conduct of Spain, she despatched General John Campbell to Pensacola with twelve hundred soldiers consisting of a regiment of Waldecks and two regiments of Tories from Maryland and Pennsylvania. On the 16th of June, 1779, the Spanish minister to England, Marquis d'Almodovar, left England immediately after delivering to Lord Weymouth a paper containing a declaration of war. Three days later, June 19, the governor of Louisiana, Don Bernardo de Galvez, published a proclamation announcing that Spain acknowledged the independence of the American colonies. In August de Galvez invaded West Florida with a force of two thousand men, and by reason of his overwhelming numbers forced the surrender of the English forts on the Mississippi River. After a period of inactivity lasting till March of the following year, he assailed the defenses of Mobile, which were taken, but only after a severe struggle, and when he had granted honorable terms to the mere handful of a garrison. Strangely enough, the Spaniard halted before attacking Pensacola, as he had halted before advancing on Mobile.

DE GALVEZ BEFORE PENSACOLA. The fall of Mobile was a warning to General Campbell to prepare to defend Pensacola. No help need be expected from

Q. What was the state of the military force of West Florida in 1778? Why were reinforcements sent to Pensacola?

England, which was now straining every muscle to hold her own against her enemies in Europe and to sustain the war in the northern colonies. Starvation threatened Pensacola, until a cruiser captured several merchant vessels in the Gulf of Mexico. It was not enough for General Campbell to strengthen Fort George, and garrison Red Cliff with fifty Waldecks, but, tired of waiting for the Spaniards, he despatched a small force to attack a Spanish post on the Mississippi, an unfortunate move, since many veteran officers and men perished, who were soon to be needed in Pensacola. On the 9th of March, 1781, the echoes of the *Mentor's* guns announced the arrival of the Spaniards. By the next morning thirty-eight vessels lay off the harbor, and nine days later the entire fleet sailed past the batteries at Red Cliff and Tartar Point into the bay; Apr. 16 but still not deeming it not wise to attack de Galvez despatched a boat to Havana for Apr. 22 more men and artillery, which arrived on eighteen vessels, April 16. An attempt had been made to land previously, but had failed. On the 22nd, however, the invaders came ashore, and began to establish camps and erect batteries. A camp near the town, which the besieged had failed to Apr. 25 surprise because of the desertion of a Waldeck, the only Catholic among the English,

Q. What reinforcements reached Pensacola? Give an account of Spain's declaration of war against England. Of her acknowledging American independence. Tell of de Galvez's movements. What delays occurred in his movements? Why could General Campbell receive no aid from England? What was the state of affairs at Pensacola? What expedition did General Campbell send out?

was taken by a night attack on the 25th. But the Spanish works went on slowly and cautiously; and without the knowledge of the garrison in Fort George, a large fort of sand and trees was constructed in the woods about one-third of a mile distant. The name given to it was San Bernardo.

CAPTURE OF FORT GEORGE. On the 27th discovering a detachment of the enemy at work in the woods, the British in Fort George turned their guns
Apr. 27 upon them. Firing became general, the Spanish opening all their batteries on the English fort. The garrison of the latter, being small, had to cease firing the first day of May, in
May 1 order to take needed rest and repair their damaged works; but the Spaniards did not attempt an assault, though now was a fine opportunity. Their guns sought for the magazine without success, till a Tory Colonel, of infamous conduct and who had been drummed out of the fort by his comrades, informed them of the fatal angle where it stood.
May 8 Then after days of firing concentrated on that spot, on the 8th of May, a thunder-like explosion shook Gage Hill, and opened a wide breach in the walls of Fort George. General Campbell
1781 coolly charged his guns, and pointed them to sweep the opening. He then sent

Q. When did de Galvez arrive? How many vessels had he? What did he do before attacking? How many reinforcements arrived? When was a landing made? Tell of the capture of one Spanish camp. What fort was built? How did the firing begin? Why did the English rest on the 1st of May? What spot did the Spaniards try to hit? How did they find out its position? How was the breach in Fort George made?

out a white flag to de Galvez and agreed to surrender on condition that his troops be allowed to march out of the breach and to stack their arms at a distance of five hundred paces and that then they be transported as soon as possible to a British port, on parole not to serve against Spain or her allies until exchanged. The Spanish commander at first refused to receive the surrender on these terms; but he accepted them when General Campbell put on a bold front. With banners flying the eight hundred British troops May 9 marched forth, and at the designated spot gave up their arms to the Spaniards, fifteen thousand strong.

DEPARTURE OF THE ENGLISH FROM WEST FLORIDA. Just before the troops marched out from Fort George, formal articles of capitulation were signed by General Campbell, Governor Chester, and Don Bernardo de Galvez. The inhabitants of Pensacola were to leave the country within eighteen months, unless they wished to become subjects of Spain, in which case they would be compelled to renounce their faith, and become Catholics. Spain, it will be remembered, stipulated in 1763 that such of her subjects as wished to remain should be permitted to worship according to their catholic faith, but England did not thus care for the religious welfare of her people.

Q. Give an account of General Campbell's actions after the breach had been made. On what terms did he surrender? Give the forces of the two sides. Who signed the formal articles of capitulation? What did the Spaniards require? How did the English terms compare with the Spanish of 1763? Where did the British troops go from Pensacola? What agreement was broken?

On June 4, the British troops left for Havana. From there they were conveyed to Brooklyn to swell the army against Washington, in open violation of the agreement by which Spain was to do nothing to aid England against the American colonies. Nearly all the inhabitants left West Florida within the required eighteen months.

CAPTURE OF THE BAHAMA ISLANDS. As part compensation for the loss of West Florida, an expedition from St. Augustine captured the Bahama Islands in the year 1783. Colonel Devereux, a high spirited officer, native of South Carolina, privately fitted out two brigs of twelve guns each, and, having on board fifty reckless and desperate adventurers, to whom were added a number of negroes, he sailed for the islands, reaching Nassau at night. Secretly landing his men near the fort which guarded the town, he rushed upon the unsuspecting sentinels, and without firing a gun overpowered the garrison. Next day by a trick he pretended to introduce a large body of men into the fort. Several boats were kept moving between it and the brigs, apparently bringing a number of soldiers ashore on each trip, but, in reality, the men returned to the ships, going to the side away from the town, when they rose from their concealment in the bottom of the boat, and were ready to be rowed to land again. Straw figures were set up on the walls of the fort and on the neighboring heights to give the appearance of a large army. Colonel Devereux then sent the Spanish governor a summons to surrender. When he hesitated, a cannon-shot fired over his house hurried him up. Too late the Spaniards found out the trick by which they had been deceived, and the shabby

force which had played it. The Bahama Islands thus became a part of England's possessions.

RETRANSFER OF FLORIDA TO SPAIN. In the midst of the prosperity enjoyed by East Florida, there came suddenly and almost without warning news
1783 of a treaty between England and Spain, announced on September 3, 1783. Spain was once more to own Florida, and England was to have in exchange the Bahama Islands, fit only for a coaling station. For many years the British government had been offering inducements to settlers from the home country as well as from her American colonies, and now they were all bundled out of the province, on a notice to leave within eighteen
1784 months, unless they should be willing to renounce their faith and become subjects of Spain. In June, 1784, Zespedez, the new Spanish governor, arrived at St. Augustine. About the same time British transports gathered in St. Mary's River, and, taking on board the wretched inhabitants of East Florida, conveyed them, some to England, some to Nova Scotia, some to the Bahama Islands, some to Jamaica. These last were treated with great harshness and cruelty, and were compelled to ask relief of the home government, which was so tardy in coming that many perished. Others preferring to trust to the kindness of their old neighbors returned to South Carolina.

Q. What part compensation for the loss of West Florida did England receive? Give Colonel Devereux's force. How did he capture the garrison? Tell the trick he played. How was the Spanish governor hurried up? What news suddenly reached the people of East Florida? What did England get in exchange for Florida?

All did not leave Florida within the specified time, and for their benefit an extension of four months was granted. For those who wished to remain permanently it was ordered that "at Natchez, and other places of both Floridas, where it is convenient, parishes of Irish clergy be established, in order to bring said colonists and their children and families to our religion with the sweetness and mildness which it advises". Some few English families remained, and all the Greeks and Minorcans of the New Smyrna settlement, who, being Roman Catholics, did not object to Spanish sovereignty.

REVIEW. We have seen that when Spain evacuated Florida in 1763 there were about seven thousand people in the province, gathered almost entirely in the wretched hamlet of Pensacola, and in St. Augustine. The twenty years of British rule built the former town into a handsome and thriving city, brought thousands of active and energetic planters into the two Floridas, traces of whose work still exist in all parts of the State, and raised the two provinces into a condition in which they bade fair to become as prosperous as any of his English majesty's American possessions. Then Spain overpowered one, and the fatal order came to evacuate the other.

Q. How did England treat her Florida subjects? When did the new Spanish governor arrive? Where did the English inhabitants go? How did those fare who went to Jamaica? To what State did some move? What extension of time was granted? Tell what was to be established for those who remained. What class of people remained? Give a review of British rule in Florida.

CHAPTER XIII.

SECOND SPANISH OCCUPATION—BOUNDARY LINES--GENERAL WILLIAM AUGUSTUS BOWLES—TWO NEW REPUBLICS—UNITED STATES SOLDIERS IN FLORIDA.

BOUNDARY LINES. Spain retained the English division of Florida into East and West Florida; but with the United States a serious discussion 1783 arose concerning the northern boundary of Sep. 3 the latter province. This boundary, it will be remembered, was the parallel of $32^{\circ} 28'$ during the British occupation. When England by the treaty of Paris, September 3, 1783, acknowledged the independence of the United States, she agreed that the southern boundary of the latter should be the thirty-first parallel. This limit was based on the charter of Georgia, given by George II, which, in reality, he had no right to grant, since it embraced territory that belonged to Spain. Spain refused to evacuate for the United States the portion of West 1779-81 Florida between 31° and $32^{\circ} 28'$. And she based her refusal on the ground that she had driven the English out of this province before the treaty of Paris was made, and that therefore England had no right to cede lands which belonged to

Q. How did Spain divide Florida? What discussion arose with the United States? What right had England to fix the southern boundary of the United States at 31° ? What limit did Spain claim for the northern boundary of Florida? On what was her claim based? How was the dispute settled?

Spain by right of conquest. This territory remained a bone of contention for twelve years, until 1795 in 1795 Washington despatched Thomas Pinckney to Madrid, where a treaty was concluded, by which Spain agreed to fix the northern boundary of West Florida at the thirty-first parallel.

TREATY WITH WILLIAM PANTON; AND WITH ALEXANDER MCGILLIVRAY. Left to Spain alone, Pensacola would have dwindled to the wretched little hamlet described by Captain Wills. But Spain saw what the trading-house of Panton, Leslie & Co. had done for the commerce of the place, and that William Panton exercised great influence over the Indians, which would be an important aid in keeping quiet her savage subjects. Accordingly, he was released from the obligation of giving up his faith, as required by the Fifth Article of the treaty between Spain and England, and an agreement was made with him, conceding to his house a monopoly of the Indian trade, with stations at Mobile, Pensacola, and Apalachee. He was bound to promote peace and good will between the Indians and Spain.

Through his influence Alexander McGillivray, Grand Chief of the Creek nation, came to Pensacola, and there concluded, on behalf of the Creeks and Seminoles, a treaty of alliance with Don Miro, of New Orleans, governor of West Florida, Don Arthur O'Neill, commandant of Pensacola, and Don Martin Navarro, intendent-general of Florida. The Creeks and Seminoles were to uphold his Catholic majesty's power, establish a general peace with the Chickasaws, Choctaws, and Cherokees, and allow no white person in their country without a permit from Spain. This

power was to set up trading-houses at suitable points, and exercise a general superintendency over the Indians.

CONDITION OF THE PROVINCES. Few of the old inhabitants of the first Spanish occupations returned. Their interest in Florida had been transferred to other homes and other countries. St. Augustine was deserted by nearly all except the Greeks and Minorcans, and the weak remnant scarcely ventured beyond the range of the castle's guns. Decay and ruin rapidly overtook the beautiful estates scattered along the coast and upon the banks of the St. Johns. Depredations of the Indians became daily more aggressive. Just after the departure of the English a band of roving savages destroyed Bella Vista, Governor Moultrie's fine country-seat, a few miles from St. Augustine; which added greatly to the general insecurity of the province. The inducements held out to settlers were coupled with such conditions that few cared to accept them. Some were even driven away, as was the case with certain of the former English land-owners, who, becoming disgusted with the Bahamas, moved to Mosquito Inlet, where they were beginning to enjoy a degree of prosperity, when the narrow policy of Spain compelled them to migrate to the free country of the United States.

Q. What did Spain see in regard to William Panton and the firm of which he was head? What agreement did she make with him? What was he bound to do? Give a result of his influence over Alexander McGillivray. State what the Creeks and Seminoles were to do. What was expected of Spain? How many of the former Spanish inhabitants returned?

In West Florida the influence of Panton upheld commerce to some extent, and caused the rise of saw-mills, brickyards, and a tanyard.

MINISTER GENET. When the French Republic was formed, Genet was its American minister. Relying on the discontented inhabitants of the South and Southwest, he projected a scheme for the conquest of the Spanish possessions of Louisiana and the Floridas. Large numbers offered their services, and preparations were made in Georgia for an army to assemble on the St. Mary's, to make a dash on East Florida. At this the Spanish governor became uneasy, and remonstrated with Governor Matthews of Georgia, who at once forbade the people of his State to engage in the enterprise. Washington, too, empowered him to call out the United States troops, if needed, to prevent the invasion. The scheme fell through. Genet soon left the country.

GOVERNOR FOLCH. The first in command of the Spanish forces and government at Pensacola was Don Arthur O'Niell, who in 1792 gave up his
1781 office to Enrique White, and he in turn to
1792 Francisco de Paula Gelabert, whom in 1796
Vincente Folch y Juan superseded. Among
1796 the first acts of Governor Folch was the laying out of a new town, San Carlos de Barran-

Q. What was the condition of the inhabitants of St. Augustine? What was becoming of the old English estates? Tell of Bella Vista. Why did not settlers accept the Spanish inducements? What is said of the settlement at Mosquito Inlet? Give the situation in West Florida. State Genet's scheme. How was it looked on by many? What preparations were made? How did the Spanish governor act?

cas,* near San Carlos, which had been rebuilt between 1781 and 1796. But Folch could not secure the royal approval for changing Pensacola to Barrancas, and so the new town was not built. Failing here, he then made changes in the plan of Pensacola.

1870 Another incident of Governor Folch's term of office deserves mention, which is the building of a ship of eight hundred tons burden that nearly seventy-five years later was still engaged in the Spanish trade, under the name *Pensacola*.

ELLICOTT'S LINE. When Spain agreed in 1795 to accept the thirty-first parallel as the northern boundary of West Florida, it was stipulated that the 1795 line should be run within six months after the ratification of the treaty. Andrew Ellicott was the United States commissioner to superintend the survey; Spain was represented by Major Stephen Minor and Sir William Duncan. Owing to 1798 the tardiness of the Spanish force in evacuating the disputed territory, it was not until the end of March, 1798, that Ellicott was able to begin the survey, which proved a long and tedious task on account of the numerous rivers, 1799 marshes, and swamps to be crossed. At

Q. Give an account of the actions of Governor Matthews, and of Washington. Mention the Spanish commanders at Pensacola. What town did Governor Folch lay out? Why did he fail to build it? What did he do at Pensacola? Tell of the ship *Pensacola*. How soon was the line marking the northern boundary of Florida to be run? Give the commissioners. When did the survey actually begin?

* The name comes from "the Spanish word *barranca*, signifying broken, in the sense in which the term is applied to a landscape." Campbell, *Hist. Sketches*, etc., p. 201.

the Chattahoochee, which was reached in August, 1799, the party had to halt and defend themselves against the attacks of the Indians incited to acts of aggression by the Spanish officers at Pensacola. From the Chattahoochee, Ellicott sailed around the coast of Florida, and ascended the St. Mary's River. Here he met the surveyors, and completed the running of the line, February 26, 1800.

GENERAL WILLIAM AUGUSTUS BOWLES. This brilliant but unprincipled man was born in Maryland, where he entered the British army at the age of fourteen. Reaching the rank of ensign, he was deprived of his commission because of insubordination. He flung his uniform into the bay at Pensacola, and betook himself to the Creek country in company with several warriors of that tribe. Here he soon learned the language, became a great favorite both of the natives and of the traders, and married a daughter of a chief among the Lower Creeks. After the fall of Pensacola, where he had acted as an ally of the British at the head of a band of Creeks, the self-styled General William Augustus Bowles joined a company of travelling comedians, and played for some time at New Providence, one of the Bahama Islands. Lord Dunmore, governor of these islands, taking a fancy to Bowles, sent him to the Chattahoochee to establish a trading-house in opposition to Panton, Leslie & Co. But as he exerted his influence against McGillivray, that chieftain gave him twenty-four hours in which to leave the Creek nation. Bowles left.

Lord Dunmore then despatched him to London with a delegation of Seminoles, Creeks, and Cherokees

to secure the aid of the government against American aggression. Returning to the Bahamas and teaching his Indian allies to navigate his pirate craft, General Bowles began a piratical warfare on the vessels of William Panton. The merchandise, obtained from Panton's vessels was carried to all parts of the Creek nation, and Bowles soon became so popular that he undertook to overthrow McGillivray, denouncing him as a traitor, which, indeed, he did appear to be after his treaty with Washington. The Great Chieftain seemed ready to fall, but by the aid of Panton and the Spanish governor of West Florida he secured the arrest of Bowles, who was sent in chains to Madrid.

At the Spanish capital Bowles was offered magnificent presents if he would give up his allegiance to the English, and further the interests of Spain among the Creeks. Failing to win him in this way, or by means of sumptuous entertainment, the king ban-
1797 ished him to an island in the Pacific Ocean, where he remained until February, 1797. General Bowles was then sent back to Spain, but on his way escaped to Sierra Leone, and from
1799 there to London. He immediately turned pirate as before, and when Mr. Ellicott reached the mouth of the Apalachicola on his way around Florida, he came across that gifted adventurer

Q. What made the survey difficult? What did the party have to do at the Chattahoochee? Give the further movements of Mr. Ellicott. Give an account of the early life of General William Augustus Bowles to the fall of Pensacola. What profession did he then follow? How did Lord Dunmore employ him? Why did he leave the Creek nation? Where did Lord Dunmore then send him?

wrecked at Fox Point ; and each was of some service to the other.

Bowles joined a noted desperado, Daniel McGirth. These two persuaded the Indians to plunder the houses of certain traders, declaring that the goods in them rightfully belonged to Bowles. On the plea that the country belonged by rights to the Creeks and Seminoles, he endeavored to stir up these Indians against the United States and Spain, and, it is claimed, to found a great empire in the Southwest under English protection. Hearing that St. Marks was poorly garrisoned, he made a dash on the place, captured it, and held it for several weeks, until Governor O'Niell of Pensacola drove him out. A large reward for his arrest, offered by Spanish officials and by Hawkins, the United States agent to the Creeks, induced the Indians to give him up. On the way down the Alabama to Mobile, his captors encamped one night on the banks of the river ; and while they were sleeping, he gnawed his bonds through, took a canoe, and paddled to the other side, where leaving the boat he fled. Unhappily, he had forgotten to shove off the canoe ; so the Indian guards easily found his trail, and recaptured him by noon. Bowles was taken from Mobile to Havana, where after a few years he died in Moro Castle.

TREACHERY OF QUESADA, GOVERNOR OF EAST FLORIDA. A distinguished Revolutionary officer,

Q. Tell of Bowles' piracy. How did he gain influence among the Creeks? Tell of him and McGillivray. Give an account of his treatment at Madrid. Of his banishment and escape. How did Mr. Ellicott find him? Whom did he then join? To what did he and McGirth incite the Indians? On what plea did he try to stir up the Indians?

General John McIntosh, and a number of families devoted to his interest, moved to the banks of the St.

Johns about 1794. Governor Quesada pre-
1794 tended to be friendly, but was in reality jealous of the respect shown to General McIntosh. On one occasion, when the latter was on a visit to St. Augustine, Quesada had him arrested charged with designs hostile to the Spanish government; and despatched a body of soldiers to Bellevue, the general's plantation, who ransacked his house and carried away all private papers. He was then imprisoned in Moro Castle. His devoted wife, who had lost her eyesight, wrote several able letters to the governor of Cuba, and even appealed to Washington to interfere, but without success. Finally, after a year, General McIntosh was released without trial. So disgusted was he with Spanish treachery that he determined to return to the States; and, accordingly, he and his adherents moved back to Georgia, destroying on the way a Spanish fort at Cowford, opposite the spot where Jacksonville now stands.

PURCHASE OF LOUISIANA. We have already heard that in 1762 France ceded to Spain that portion of
Louisiana which lay west of the Mississippi,
1762 with a small section on the eastern bank near
the river's mouth. In 1800 by the treaty of
1800 San Ildefonso Napoleon compelled Spain to

Q. Give General Bowles' scheme. What town did he capture? Give an account of his capture and attempt to escape. What finally became of him? Who settled on the St. Johns in 1794? How did the Spanish governor pretend to treat him? Give the circumstances of his capture. Where was General McIntosh imprisoned? Tell of his wife's efforts to secure his release.

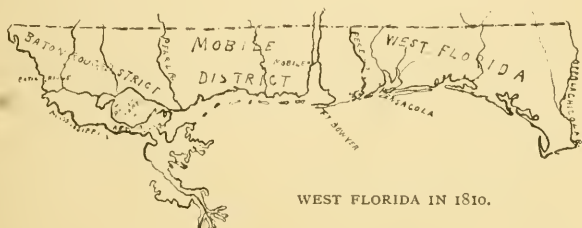
return the present. Three years later he parted with Louisiana to the United States. Before 1803 1762 the French territory had embraced what afterwards formed West Florida westward of the Perdido River; and so when the United States bought out France's American possessions, the United States claimed that she should also have the "Government of Baton Rouge" and the "Mobile district", both claimed by Spain as a part of West Florida. This latter power maintained with great show of reason that as she had never received the two districts from France, but had conquered them from England, they could not be considered a part of Louisiana, and consequently France could not sell them to the United States.

By the "Government of Baton Rouge" was meant the country lying south of 31° , and included between the Pearl River on the east and the Mississippi and Bayou Iberville on the west and south. The governor of this district was Don Carlos de Grandpré. "Mobile district" also lay south of 31° , and was 1809 bounded on the west by the Pearl, on the east by the Perdido, and the Gulf of Mexico washed its southern shore. In 1809 Governor Folch left Pensacola to take command at Mobile, the capital of "Mobile district".

NAMING THE STREETS OF PENSACOLA. It is interesting to find that in the names of Pensacola's streets

Q. Give an account of General McIntosh's release and return to Georgia. What did Spain receive from France in 1762? Relate the return to France and sale to the United States. Why did the latter claim West Florida west of the Perdido? What two districts was it divided into? What did Spain give as her reason for retaining the disputed territory? What was the "Government of Baton Rouge"?

her citizens have recorded their patriotic love for the Spain which rose as one man to cast off the yoke imposed on her by Napoleon in 1808. Zaragoza, Baylen, Alcaniz, Tarragona, Palafox, Romana, recall thrilling sieges, bloody battlefields, heroic leaders, of the great "Peninsula campaign".



GOVERNORS OF THE TWO FLORIDAS. In West Florida Governor Folch was succeeded in 1809 by his son-in-law, Don Francisco Maximiliano de Saint Maxent, who acted as governor until July, 1812. Mauricio Zuniga followed until May of the next year, when Mateo Gurzalez Maurique was commissioned in his stead. Enrique White became governor of East Florida in 1803, a man with deep prejudices against Americans. Nine years later we find Colonel Estrada acting as governor until the arrival in June of Governor Kindelan.

REPUBLIC OF WEST FLORIDA. The contention of Spain that the "Government of Baton Rouge" and the "Mobile District" were not included in Louisiana was upheld by the French view of the case. But the United States stoutly insisted on her side of the question, and

carried on negotiations for several years without avail. Finally, when Spain was occupied in fighting Napoleon, the people of the "Government of Baton Rouge", aided by Americans, threw off her yoke, and declared themselves a free and independent State under the title "Republic of West Florida", with a constitution similar to that of the United States. A petition was sent to Washington praying to be admitted
1810 into the Union. And after an existence of
Oct. 27 one month, the "Republic of West Florida" was annexed to Louisiana, October 27, 1810.

"MOBILE DISTRICT." In revenge for cruel treatment received from the Spaniards, the Kemper brothers, shortly after the organization of the "Republic of West Florida", raised a body of troops for the purpose of taking Mobile, which was at this time under the command of Governor Folch. The news of the invasion so frightened the governor that he offered to surrender to the authorities at Washington. But the Kemper expedition came to grief. A number of the men were captured and sent to Havana to be immured in Moro Castle; and, besides, the Federal authorities despatched troops to Mobile to assist the Spanish in the defense.

After the United States declared war against Eng-
1812 land in 1812, fearing to leave the "Mobile
June 18 district" in the possession of Spain, a secret ally of England, she ordered General Wil-

Q. What was "Mobile district"? Where did Pensacola get the names of many of her streets? Name some of them. Mention the governors of West Florida. Give those of East Florida. How was Spain upheld by France? Give the United States' course of action.

kinson to occupy it with a force from New Orleans. Accordingly, with six hundred men
1813 he sailed to Mobile, and after a short parley
April succeeded in inducing the Spanish command-
13 ant to surrender and retire to Pensacola.
This was April 13, 1813.

FERNANDINA. After the President of the United States (*Jefferson*) had forbidden intercourse with foreign countries, Fernandina, on Amelia Island, and not far from the Georgia border, became not
1808 long after its occupation by the Spaniards in
1808 a port of free entry for foreign vessels,
1812 and in consequence as many as one hundred
and fifty square-rigged ships in its harbor at one time was no unusual occurrence. In 1812 its population numbered about six hundred.

REPUBLIC OF FLORIDA. Recognizing that England would be likely to seize Florida to make of it a basis of operation during the coming war, Presi-
1811 dent Madison in 1811 appointed Colonel
John McKee and General Mathews, of Georgia, commissioners to negotiate with the Spanish authorities of Florida a friendly cession of the provinces, or if need be, fix a date for their return. If successful, they were to establish a provisional government. In case of failure, Congress, which was sitting in secret session at the passage of the bill author-

Q. Give an account of the rise of the "Republic of West Florida". Tell of its annexation to the United States. What expedition did the Kempers organize? What was done by Governor Folch? What became of the expedition? Why did the United States desire to occupy the "Mobile district"? Tell of Wilkinson's expedition.

izing the President to act, declared that forcible possession should be taken, if there should be any reason to suppose a foreign power intended to seize the Floridas. In spite of every precaution to prevent these negotiations from getting abroad, the plans of the United States became generally known.

1812 Many of the Georgia frontiersmen were anxious to make a descent on Florida, and congregated on the banks of the St. Mary's. Here they united with the border settlers on the opposite side of the river, with whom they formed an independent "Republic of Florida". General John H. McIntosh was elected president of the new republic, and Colonel Ashley, military chief.

CAPTURE OF FERNANDINA. Having determined to occupy Fernandina and Amelia Island, General Mathews sent nine warships into Fernandina harbor, on the pretense of protecting American shipping. He also made use of the patriot forces of the "Republic of Florida", who under Colonel Ashley approached the town in boats and sent to the commander, Don José Lopez, a summons to surrender. Don José

1812 beholding the guns of nine ships of war March trained on the town ready to back the demands of the patriots, had no escape from surrendering. On the seventeenth day of March, 1812, the articles of capitulation were signed.

Q. Give the Embargo Act in its relation to Fernandina. What was that city's population in 1812? Why did President Madison appoint McKee and Mathews as commissioners? In case of failure, what was to be done? When the government's plans became known, what course did the Georgia frontiersmen pursue? Give the officers of the new republic.

According to the Fifth Article Fernandina was to remain a free port of entry for all vessels, but, in case of war between the United States and England, ships of the latter country should not enter after May 1, 1813.

1813
May 1

EXPEDITION AGAINST ST. AUGUSTINE. On the day after the surrender Lieutenant Ridgeley of the United States Army was put in command of the patriot force. Colonel Ashley was then despatched with three hundred men in the direction of St. Augustine, and pitched his camp at Fort Moosa, two miles distant, where he was joined by one hundred regulars under Colonel Smith. William Craig, one of the former Spanish judges, was here made commander in place of Colonel Ashley. The acting governor of East Florida, Colonel Estrada, feeling unable to attack the patriots in open field, placed several cannon on a schooner, from which he opened fire on the camp at Fort Moosa, and thus compelled the invaders to retire to Pass Navarro, a mile further away. Soon afterwards the majority withdrew beyond the St. Johns, leaving only a small guard at the Pass.

When the Spanish minister at Washington received information of these proceedings on the part of the United States forces, he remonstrated against the invasion of the territory of a friendly power. The British minister joined him in the remonstrance. General

Q. Give an account of General Mathews' proceedings. Why did the commander of Fernandina surrender without a fight? What did the fifth article of the surrender stipulate? Who took command of the patriot forces? Tell of the camp at Fort Moosa. Who succeeded Colonel Ashley? Relate the means employed by Colonel Estrada to rid himself of the invaders. Give their movements.

Mathews, the President declared, had gone beyond his instructions; he was therefore removed and his place filled by Governor Mitchell of Georgia, who had orders to restore the condition of affairs before the invasion and assist Governor Estrada in securing order.

“TWELVE-MILE SWAMP.” The guard left by the patriots at Pass Navarro suffered much from sickness, and it became necessary to send a number of the men back to the “republic”. As these invalids were on their way under the charge of a United States officer, Lieutenant Williams, a party of negroes from St. Augustine fired on them from ambush at the Twelve-mile Swamp, and killed and wounded several officers and privates. A charge of the soldiers routed the negroes. Governor Mitchell at once ordered an expedition against St. Augustine. In the 1812 meantime, however, Governor Kindelan arrived, and immediately demanded the withdrawal of Colonel Smith and his men, who, accordingly retired to Davis Creek on the King’s Road.

WAR WITH BOWLEGS AND KING PAYNE. In 1750 a band of Creeks with their chief Secoffee migrated to the Alachua district. His two sons, King 1812 Payne and Bowlegs, about 1812, began to be troublesome because of their depredations on the planters, driving off cattle, and stealing slaves;

Q. What remonstrance did the Spanish minister make? How did the President act? Give Governor Mitchell’s orders. How did the men at Pass Navarro fare? Give an account of the ambuscade. What became of the camp? What migration of Indians did Secoffee lead? How did Payne and Bowlegs prove troublesome?

and were preparing to raid into Georgia. This influenced Colonel Newman to carry the war into King Payne's country. With only one hundred and ten patriots he marched one hundred miles through in an almost unknown territory, until on the third day near Lake Pithlachocco, a few miles from Payne's town, the two brothers and one hundred and fifty followers suddenly attacked them from a thick hammock, where they were safe from the return fire. But a feigned flight drew them out. King Payne fought gallantly from his powerful white charger, and fell mortally wounded. The Indians then retired, but returned under Bowlegs about sunset, and with frightful yells advanced up to the breastworks that had been hastily erected. Several such charges were made before they finally gave up. On the night of the eighth day the troops began a silent march, carrying the wounded on litters, but they had not proceeded far when they were overtaken by Bowlegs with fifty Seminoles. A charge routed these. Breastworks were again constructed, and messengers sent for relief, which arrived in the shape of sixteen horsemen, after the company had subsisted for several days on two alligators that had been taken by a foraging party. In two days all reached Piccolata. Though King Payne's death put a stop to the preparations for war, small bands continued to burn and plunder. The patriots retaliated on the Spanish settlers, so that in a

Q. On what did Colonel Newman determine? Give the march of Colonel Newman. Describe the fight. Tell about the retreat of the patriots. How were they relieved? On what had they lived for several days? Give the state of affairs in East Florida.

short time there was scarcely a house in East Florida that had not been ransacked or burned.

WITHDRAWAL OF THE UNITED STATES TROOPS. About 1812 a party of Georgians under General Harris, carrying a surveyor, penetrated to the Alachua district, where they were all murdered by a roving band of savages. The surveyor's notes, conveyed to George I. F. Clarke, surveyor-general for the Spanish government, formed the basis for the future land grants in Alachua and Marion counties.

Governor Mathews was superseded by General Pinckney, but no further operations were carried on, although East Florida was virtually a conquered province. The Spanish planters finally gave up 1813 in despair, and, leaving their plantations, moved to St. Augustine. However, a measure of relief came in the spring of 1813 in the removal of the American troops.

Q. Relate the fate of the party of Georgians who went to the Alachua district. What became of the surveyor's notes? What did the Spanish planters finally do? How did a measure of relief come?

CHAPTER XIV.

WAR OF 1812—TECUMSEH'S VISIT TO THE CREEKS AND SEMINOLES—PERCY AND NICHOLLS— JACKSON AT PENSACOLA.

TECUMSEH'S VISIT TO THE CREEKS AND SEMINOLES. In the spring of 1812 Tecumseh, the great Shawnee chief, was despatched by the British of Canada to the Southern Indians for the purpose of inciting them to war against the American frontier settlements. Among the Seminoles he met with success owing to the hostility already existing. In October he passed through the Creeks on his way north, and visited their grand council which was then being held by the Creek agent, Colonel Hawkins, at Tookabatcha, on the Tallapoosa. Tecumseh appeared each day in the assembly, but refused to deliver his "talk" till Colonel Hawkins had departed. Then he burst forth in a torrent of fiery eloquence for which he was famous, and exhorted his hearers to return to the ways of their ancestors, not to adopt the civilization of the white man. A prophet accompanying Tecumseh spoke next, declaring that the Great Spirit would not allow harm to any Indian who should engage in war on the pale-face Americans,

Q. Why was Tecumseh sent to the southern Indians? Why was he successful among the Seminoles? Give an account of his behavior at Tookabatcha. What did he exhort his hearers to do? What did the prophet declare? What had the British told him?

whom the earth would open and swallow, and that they should see the arm of Tecumseh stretched out in the clear heavens. The British had told him of a comet that was to appear, in order that he might delude the southern Indians. Many new prophets were inspired among the Creeks, one of them being the famous prophet Francis.

Tecumseh travelled to all parts of the nation, and met with much success, although the Big Warrior refused to take up arms. In his wrath the Shawnee chief, standing before him, cried, "You do not believe the



GEN. ANDREW JACKSON.

Great Spirit has sent me. You shall believe it. I will leave directly, and go straight to Detroit. When I get there I will stamp my foot upon the ground, and shake down every house in Tookabatcha". The common Indians believed every word of this, and when an earthquake

did come after the departure of Tecumseh, they ran out of their houses, shouting, "Tecumseh has got to Detroit! Tecumseh has got to Detroit! We feel the shake of his foot".

THE CREEK NATION GOES TO WAR. After the departure of Tecumseh, those who had accepted his "talk" began to dance "the dance of the lakes", which he had taught them. British agents at Pensacola furnished them with arms. Civil war broke out in the nation, since the war party regarded the others as traitors, and thought that if they could put the Big

Warrior and other influential chiefs out of the way, it would be an easy matter to rouse the whole nation to war against the American settlements. The Federal troops were called in. Fort Mims above Mobile, filled with women and children, was taken by surprise by a thousand Creek warriors led by one William Weatherford, a nephew of General Alexander McGillivray, and though Weatherford himself opposed it, every person without distinction of age or sex was murdered and scalped. General Andrew Jackson now took the field, marching from Tennessee. In a series of battles culminating with the bloody fight at Horse Shoe Bend, he so completely whipped the Creek warriors that they never rallied for any serious engagement thereafter. Hundreds of them

1814 fled to the swamps of Florida; others to Pensacola, where they joined the British standard. Peace was made with the remnant of the Creek nation at Fort Jackson, August 9, 1814.

This war is often spoken of as the war of the "Red Sticks", because Tecumseh gave to the warriors who engaged in it a small red stick.

SURRENDER OF WEATHERFORD. The surrender of Weatherford is so interesting, that it deserves to be related. Jackson had directed that he should be captured at all hazards; but Weatherford resolved to surrender voluntarily. As he approached the general's tent, the latter came running out, and exclaimed in a

Q. What famous prophet was inspired? Tell what Tecumseh said to the Big Warrior. How did the earthquake affect the common Indians? What dance did the Creeks begin? Where did they obtain arms? Why did some wish to put the Big Warrior out of the way? Tell about Fort Mims. Who now took the field against the Indians?

furious manner: "How dare you, sir, to ride up to my tent, after having murdered the women and children at Fort Mims!" Weatherford replied: "General Jackson, I am not afraid of you. I fear no man, for I am a Creek warrior. I have nothing to request in behalf of myself; you can kill me, if you desire. But I come to beg you to send for the women and children of the war party, who are now starving in the woods. Their fields and cribs have been destroyed by your people, who have driven them to the woods without an ear of corn. I hope that you will send out parties, who will safely conduct them here, in order that they may be fed. I exerted myself in vain to prevent the massacre of the women and children at Fort Mims. I am now done fighting. The Red Sticks are nearly all killed. If I could fight you any longer, I would most heartily do so. Send for the women and children. They never did you any harm. But kill me, if the white people want it done."

Many of the persons gathered around the tent exclaimed, "Kill him! Kill him! Kill him!" But General Jackson, in an emphatic tone, said, "Any man who would kill as brave a man as this would rob the dead". Weatherford's life was spared, and he afterwards became an excellent citizen of Alabama.

Q. Tell of Jackson's campaign. Where did the Creeks flee? Why is this war spoken of as the war of the "Red Sticks"? What orders had General Jackson given concerning Weatherford? What did Jackson do when Weatherford came in to surrender? What did Weatherford say concerning himself? of the Creek women and children? of his own efforts at Fort Mims? Give the remainder of his speech. Give Jackson's reply to those who wished to kill him. What became of him?

BRITISH AT PENSACOLA. Spain was at this time weak, as well as hostile towards the United States, so that she could not prevent the English from using Pensacola and Apalachicola Bay as points from which to supply the Creeks with arms, and as posts at which to rally the defeated Red Sticks. Jackson kept himself well informed through spies of these operations, but his remonstrance met with a denial from Maurique, the governor at Pensacola, who at the same time justified British occupation by treaties which the latter had made with the Indians years before.

In August, 1814, after General Jackson had gone to Mobile, a British fleet of four ships, with two tenders, under the command of Captain William
1814 Henry Percy, came into Pensacola Bay. On
Aug. board were two or three hundred marines, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Nicholls. The feeble Maurique handed over to Percy and Nicholls San Carlos, the battery on Santa Rosa Island, and Fort St. Michael, over which the English flag was once more hoisted. These commanders and a certain Captain Woodbine drilled Red Sticks in British uniform on the streets of Pensacola. A bounty of ten dollars was offered for every scalp, and
1814 a proclamation was issued, calling on the citizens of Kentucky and Louisiana to join the standard of their forefathers or remain neutral.

Q. What places in Florida did England make use of? Why did not Spain prevent her? How did Governor Maurique answer Jackson's protest? What British force came into Pensacola Bay? What did Maurique hand over to Percy and Nicholls? What bounty was offered? What proclamation was issued?

ATTACK ON FORT BOWYER. The first operation of Percy and Nicholls was an attack on Fort Bowyer at Mobile Point, preparatory to an attempt on Mobile itself. A force of Indians and British assailed the post from the rear, while two brigs came into Sept. position before it, and opened fire from the 13, 15 bay. On the 13th and again on the 15th the garrison gallantly drove back the enemy, and on the latter date destroyed Captain Percy's flagship, the *Hermes*; upon which the British gave up the fight and retired.

JACKSON MOVES ON PENSACOLA. Before the attack on Fort Bowyer General Jackson wrote from Mobile to Governor Maurice expostulating with him for allowing the English forces to occupy the fortifications of Pensacola. But the governor answered in an insulting manner "that Jackson should hear from him shortly". Pensacola now losing all claim to neutrality, the American general decided to advance upon it without delay, and drive out the British.

Oct. Accordingly, he left Mobile for the upper country, where by the last of October he arranged for supplies and gathered his men, three thousand strong, augmented by a band of friendly Choctaws. The line of march lay over the Nov. 6 old Indian trail that runs north from Pensacola. By the 6th of November Jackson

Q. Give the first operation of Percy and Nicholls. Give an account of the attack on Fort Bowyer. For what did Jackson expostulate with Maurice? Give Maurice's answer. What did Jackson decide to do? How large was Jackson's force? What was the line of march? Tell what was done when Jackson arrived.

pitched his camp within a mile and a half of the Spanish fortifications, and despatched Major Pierre with a flag of truce; but that officer was fired on as he approached Fort St. Michael. Afterwards, Major Pierre succeeded in carrying to Maurique a summons to surrender to the Americans until a sufficient Spanish force should arrive to be able to preserve neutrality. The governor refused.

1814
CAPTURE OF PENSACOLA. Reconnoitering to find out the enemy's position and number, Jackson at once formed his plan of attack. Captain Denkins with a small force occupied old San Bernardo, which was once more pitted against its ancient antagonist. During the night the general marched the remainder of his troops around the town, and in the morning advanced from the east, drove the Spaniards from the two batteries which opposed his progress, and received a surrender at discretion from Maurique, who advanced to meet him, carrying a flag of truce. As the troops marched down the main street British marines fired on them from boats, but a brisk answer in the shape of several volleys compelled them to take refuge on their ships.

In the evening the battery on Santa Rosa Island was blown up. Captain Sotto in command of Fort St. Michael refused at first to give up the Nov. 8 fort according to Maurique's instructions, but preparations for an assault quickly brought him to terms. Next morning Jackson was making preparations for an attack on San Carlos, or Barrancas, which the governor refused to surrender, when a tremendous explosion was heard in that direction, announcing, as was afterwards learned, the

destruction of the fortress, and the departure of the British. To make sure, the general despatched a company of soldiers, who returned in the evening and reported that the information was correct.

Nov. 9 On the 9th, having blown up Fort St.
1815 Michael, General Jackson set out for New
Jan. 8 Orleans, where on January 8, 1815, he was to
fight the glorious Battle of New Orleans.

FORT ON THE APALACHICOLA. Along with Percy and Nicholls went their Indian allies and one hundred negroes belonging to the Spanish inhabitants
1814 of Pensacola. The two commanders conveyed them to the Apalachicola, where they built for them a strong fort on the spot occupied at a later date by Fort Gadsden, in order that it might be a place of refuge for runaway negroes and the fugitive Red Sticks. Two large magazines were constructed and filled with ammunition, and three thousand stand of small arms were deposited there for the arming of the Indians and negroes for a war of extermination on the frontier settlements of southern Georgia and Alabama.

MAJOR BLUE CLEARS WEST FLORIDA OF HOSTILE INDIANS. Between the capture of Pensacola and the Battle of New Orleans, Major Blue scoured the country around the Perdido River and Escambia and the

Q. How long was the surrender of Pensacola to last? How did Maurique receive the summons? What fort was occupied? Give Jackson's movements. What did Maurique do? What became of the British? What battery was blown up? How was Captain Sotto brought to terms? Why did not the Americans attack San Carlos? What fort did Jackson blow up?

other bays of West Florida, killing and capturing many of the refugee Creeks. Those who were captured were sent with their wives and children to Fort Montgomery. This expedition is a good example of the way the white man used the Indian to destroy the Indian, for with Major Blue were Choctaws, Chickasaws, and Creeks.

Q. Where did the American commander go? Who went with Percy and Nicholls? What fort did the English build? For what was it to be a place of refuge? What further was done there? What work was performed by Major Blue? Of what is this expedition a good example?

CHAPTER XV.

REPUBLIC OF FLORIDA—SEMINOLE WAR—JACKSON INVADES THE FLORIDAS—ARBUTHNOT AND AMBRISTER—SECOND CAPTURE OF PENSACOLA—PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT—RESTORATION TO SPAIN.

“REPUBLIC OF FLORIDA.” It will be remembered that in 1812 the district between the St. Johns and St. Mary’s Rivers was organized into a “Republic of Florida”. The region below the latter river had long been a refuge for worthless and desperate characters from Georgia; and as the new re-
1816 public could enforce no restraint on its mem-
Aug. bers, anarchy and licentiousness ruled unchecked. Even the honest, it is said, were forced to protect themselves by turning rogues. At last, in August, 1816, George I. F. Clarke, who has been mentioned as surveyor-general of East Florida, proposed to the newly arrived Governor Coppinger a plan to bring the republican district again under Spanish rule, and reestablish order. The scheme was approved. Mr. Clarke met some forty of the patriots, and appointed a time for a general meeting to be held at Waterman’s Bluff. On the day appointed, having drawn up a code of laws, he went to the place of meeting, where he found several hundred men assembled.

Q. What was the “Republic of Florida”? What was the condition of affairs in the “Republic”? What plan did George I. F. Clarke propose? What did he then do? Who were assembled to meet him?

"I tendered them," he says, "a distribution into three districts of all the territory lying between St. Johns River and St. Mary's, with a magistrate's court and a company of militia in each; and those to be called Nassau, Upper and Lower St. Mary's; an election of officers from the mass of the people in each, without allowing the candidates to offer themselves; that the officers to be elected should be immediately commissioned to enter on the functions of their offices; and that all the past should be buried in total oblivion." "These propositions were received by a general expression of satisfaction"; and in a few hours the new government was organized and furnished with magistrates. Governor Coppinger afterwards appointed Mr. Clarke general supervisor of the three districts.

For five years this section of East Florida was the best regulated and most prosperous part of the whole province. But in 1821 the government at 1821 St. Augustine having united the three districts into one and joined them to East Florida with a central government in the city just mentioned, the inhabitants considered that their constitutional rights had been interfered with, and petitioned the government; but before anything could be accomplished Spain parted with her Florida possessions to the United States.

DESTRUCTION OF FORT ON THE APALACHICOLA. Even after the close of the War of 1812 British agents continued to incite the Seminoles to commit depredations on the lower Georgia and Alabama settlements. And the fort built by Percy and Nicholls on the Apalachicola became an obstruction to navigation. This

refuge for Indians and for fugitive slaves went by the name of the Negro Fort, and was under the 1816 command of a negro, by name Garcia. In Aug. August, 1816, Colonel Clinch, one hundred and fifty miles up the river at Fort Crawford was notified that supplies were to be conveyed up the river to him; and that in case opposition was made by the Negro Fort to the navigation of the stream, it should be reduced. Learning of the arrival of the provisions at Apalachicola Bay, Colonel Clinch set out down the river with one hundred and sixteen men. On the way he was joined by a band of Creeks who were marching to attack the fort, and another body of these warriors increased his force the next day. From a prisoner he learned that Midshipman Luffborough and four men had been sent from the transports into the river after fresh water, and that, attacked by the Seminoles, only one man of them had escaped.

A part of the Indian allies were stationed near the fort to keep up an harassing fire and shut off communication with the outside world, a second Aug. body, with a detachment of American troops 24 went to the rear of the fort, and on the opposite bank of the river a battery was stationed, below which the gunboats took position, coming up from the bay. Over the fort floated a red flag, the British Jack waving above it. The garrison opened

Q. Mention some things Mr. Clarke tendered them. How soon were the new officers to begin their duties? How were these propositions received? To what office was Mr. Clarke appointed? What was the condition of this section? What was done with this section in 1821? What did British agents incite the Seminoles to commit? To what did the negro fort become an obstruction?

fire at once, but so effectively was it answered that at the fifth discharge a hot-shot struck one of the magazines, exploding it, and blowing up the fort, which besides one hundred warriors contained two hundred women and children. Not over fifty escaped the explosion. Garcia and an outlawed Choctaw chief were tried by the friendly Indians and condemned to death for the murder of Midshipman Luffborough and his companions. The Spanish negroes were handed over to the Spanish agent, and Colonel Clinch took charge of the slaves who were runaways from American owners. One hundred and sixty barrels of powder were secured from the uninjured magazine, besides property to the amount of two hundred thousand dollars.

"INDEPENDENT FLAG" AT FERNANDINA. About the middle of 1817 an adventurer, Gregor McGregor, who had fought against Spain in South America, landed on Amelia Island with a band of filibusters gathered mainly from the States. Don Francisco de Morales, the commandant of the island, surrendered. MacGregor then declared the whole coast of Florida under blockade, and pompously assured his men that he would soon "plant the Green Cross of Florida on the proud walls of St. Augustine". He attempted without success to excite to arms the patriots of the former Republic of Florida. A Spanish expedition from St. Augustine failed to drive him from Amelia Island. As he had not met

Q. Who commanded at Negro Fort? Of what was Colonel Clinch notified? Tell of his march. Tell of Midshipman Luffborough and his men. Give the arrangement of Colonel Clinch's forces. What flags waved over the forts? How was the fort blown up? How many persons were in the fort? What became of Garcia? of the negro slaves?

with the desired success, he sailed to the Bahama Islands for men and money. During his absence R. Hubbard, late sheriff of New York City, acted as governor, but was compelled to give way to another adventurer, Louis Aury, who had been operating at Matagorda under the flag of Mexico. He lowered the "Green Cross of Florida" and raised the standard of Mexico; but at this juncture American troops arrived and took possession of the island for the king of Spain.

FIRST SEMINOLE WAR BEGINS. The destruction of the negro fort in 1816 did not put an end to the predatory expeditions of the Seminoles. War, however, did not actually begin till the fall of the following year, when Colonel Twiggs attacked Fowlton, a Seminole village just above the Georgia line. At once the Indians began to wreak revenge. Of the many bloody massacres the most horrible was that of Lieutenant Scott and his command as they were ascending the Apalachicola. Just as the boats of the party passed the thickest part of a swamp which lined the river banks, a fierce fire from the concealed Indians burst forth on the doomed men and women, forty-six in number, besides five children. Only five escaped, one woman spared by her captors, and four men who swam to the opposite shore.

JACKSON IN EAST FLORIDA. Jackson was at this

Q. What property was secured? Who landed on Amelia Island in 1817? What did he declare? Of what did he assure his men? Whom did he attempt to excite to arms? Where did he sail? Tell of Hubbard and Aury. Who took possession for the king of Spain? How did the first war with the Seminoles begin?

time in Tennessee. The United States government ordered him and General Gaines to proceed
1818 against the Seminoles with eight hundred regular troops and one thousand militia, to be increased if necessary, by requisitions on the governors of the neighboring States. Jackson issued a circular to his friends in Tennessee, who at once joined him to the number of one thousand. With these, augmented by five hundred regulars, and about two thousand friendly Indians, he invaded the Seminole fastnesses in East Florida, and in a campaign of six weeks completely crushed the hostile warriors. The Miccosukee towns were first destroyed. Here three hundred scalps of men, women, and children, fifty of them fresh from the heads of the victims, were found dangling from a red war pole. Then the Fowl towns were destroyed in a rapid march. From these Jackson suddenly descended on St. Marks, since he heard that Spanish agents at this place were instigating the Seminoles to hostilities, and notwithstanding its strong fortifications the town surrendered without a struggle. Alexander Arbuthnot, a Scotch trader and friend of the Indians, was arrested at the gate of the fort.

FRANCIS THE PROPHET: MALEE HIS DAUGHTER.
By means of a vessel flying the British flag, Jackson
1818 captured the Prophet Francis, one of the leaders of the Creek War of 1813-14. Fran-

Q. Give an account of the massacre of Lieutenant Scott and his command. Who were ordered to march against the Indians? How did Jackson raise troops? Give his whole force. How long was his campaign? What towns were first destroyed? What was found here? Give Jackson's further movements. Who was arrested at St. Marks?

cis had just returned from London, where he received many presents, and was commissioned a brigadier-general; but incautiously venturing on board the supposed English vessel, he was taken, and hanged with his commission on his person. Malee, his daughter, came near falling into the same trap. But her suspicions were aroused in time, and turning her canoe to the shore, she disappeared safely into the woods, though a hail of canister shot rained on every side.

There is a beautiful story told of this Indian maid, similar to the tale of Pocahontas in Virginia. Not long before the capture of Francis, a young Georgian, named Duncan McRimmon, fell into his hands, and was bound to a stake, with fagots piled around him, ready to be lighted by the torch, when Malee rushed forward and plead with her father to spare the white youth. She succeeded. McRimmon was sent to St. Marks, and by a strange fatality was on the decoy vessel when Francis arrived. After the war had ended, the young Georgian sought out Malee, and, though refused several times, finally won her for his bride, who had once preserved his life.

ARBUTHNOT AND AMBRISTER. A raid march from St. Marks brought Jackson to the Suwannee. Here he dispersed a large number of Indians, and made many prisoners, among them Robert Ambrister, once a soldier in Nicholls' command. If either Alexander Ar-

Q. Tell of the Prophet Francis. Relate the escape of his daughter. Give the story of McRimmon's rescue. Where was he at the capture of Francis? What became of Malee? Where did General Jackson go from St. Marks? What prisoner was captured? What is to be said of the innocence of Arbuthnot and Ambrister?

buthnot or Robert Ambrister was innocent of the charge of "aiding and abetting" the enemy, 1818 it was the former, whose counsel, according to the evidence, had been for peace. Robert Ambrister confessed to having given the Indians advice and assistance. In his impulsive way Jackson hanged both, though the court had changed the sentence of the latter to fifty stripes and confinement "with a ball and chain at hard labor for twelve months".

General Jackson afterwards received severe censure for this act of his Seminole campaign.

INVASION OF WEST FLORIDA. Hearing that the Spaniards of Pensacola were in sympathy with the enemy, the American commander resolved May 10 to repeat the lesson of 1814. On the 10th of May he crossed the Apalachicola, and marched along the trail that leads over the natural bridge of the Chipola River. Jackson himself passed over the bridge, but a large division of his army made a circuit, and having thus to cross the river, were much delayed, which worked the general into a frenzy. At first he refused to believe that they had been retarded by a river, but was restored to good humor when informed by the guides of the existence of the natural bridge. In a cave beneath this the Indians May 23 west of the Apalachicola were concealed, 1816-18 fearful and trembling, as Jackson marched above their heads. By the 23rd the Americans crossed the Escambia. A courier from Don José Masot (1816-1818), successor to Governor Maurique, met Jackson here with a written protest requiring him "to retire from the Province", otherwise force would

be used to expel him. The general marched all the faster. By the evening of the same day the army was in possession of Fort St. Michael, and encamped around it. Don José Masot hurriedly with-
1818 drew to San Carlos with most of his troops, leaving a few men at Pensacola under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Don Luis Piedmas. Upon Jackson's summons to surrender, the governor referred him to Colonel Piedmas for Pensacola, but for Barrancas he replied: "This fortress I am resolved to defend to the last extremity. I shall repel force by force, and he who resists aggression can never be considered an aggressor. God preserve your excellency many years." By arrangement Colonel Piedmas gave up Pensacola.

SAN CARLOS DEFENDED "TO THE LAST EXTREMITY." General Jackson, anxious to avoid bloodshed, sent Masot another summons to surrender, May 25 hinting at the folly of resisting an overwhelming force. In the evening the American army invested San Carlos, and at midnight its batteries were planted within four hundred yards of the fort. The refusal of a third demand to give up was the signal for the firing to begin, which continued until evening, when a truce was agreed on; and on the next day articles of capitulation were signed, to the effect that the troops should march out with honors of war and be conveyed to Havana. Don José Masot as much as

Q. To what did Ambrister confess? What did Jackson do with these two prisoners? How was this act of his received? Why did he march on to Pensacola? Tell the story about the natural bridge. What protest did Governor Masot send to General Jackson? What effect did it have?

gave up to the United States the complete possession of West Florida.

THE "PEGGY." As Governor Masot was shortly afterwards voyaging to Havana on the cartel "Peggy", he was overhauled by one of the craft sailing under the "Independent Flag" of Spain's revolted colonies in South America. Inasmuch as the "Peggy" was an American vessel, she was not held as a prize. But the Spanish passengers were plundered of their valuables, Masot himself losing eight thousand dollars.

PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT. The American commander now appointed Colonel King civil and military governor of West Florida and Captain
1818 Gadsden collector of the port of Pensacola, extended the civil laws over the province, and provided for the preservation of the archives and government property. The provisional government thus established was to last "until Spain could furnish a sufficient military force to execute the obligations of existing treaties". This done, General Jackson returned to Tennessee to seek needed repose.

CENSURE OF JACKSON'S CONDUCT. Success always receives praise, and Jackson's friends now commended him highly for the swiftness and despatch with which he had brought the Seminole War to an end. But, on the other hand, severe censure was passed on his proceedings, and a committee of the United States

Q. How did Masot act? Give the reply to Jackson's summons to surrender. Who surrendered Pensacola? Why was another summons sent to Masot? What can you tell about the capture of San Carlos? Give the articles of capitulation. What did Masot give up? Relate the incident of the "Peggy".

Senate to investigate the occurrences of the war condemned all his acts, especially the capture of St. Marks and Pensacola and the hanging of Arbuthnot and Ambrister. An unsuccessful attempt was made to fasten on him a land scandal, namely, that he had been guilty of assisting certain speculators to purchase land at Pensacola previous to the war. Nothing, however, came of this.

RETRANSFER TO SPAIN. Though Congress did not expressly disavow Jackson's conduct, yet it held itself ready to return West Florida to Spain, whenever a force appeared to occupy Pensacola. Such a force appearing in September, 1819, the Americans at once evacuated Pensacola and Barrancas. A treaty had already been made for the purchase of the Floridas by the United States, and had been ratified by the Senate, though not by the Spanish government; so it seems that the arrival of a Spanish governor and army was for the purpose of avoiding any appearance of being forced to give up the provinces.

GOVERNORS OF THE TWO FLORIDAS. In East Florida Governor Kindelan was superseded about 1816 the middle of 1816 by Don José Coppinger, who continued in office until he handed over 1821 the province to Colonel Butler, of the United July 10 States Army, July 10, 1821. Don José Masot succeeded Governor Maurique in the

Q. How was a provisional government established? How long was this government to last? How was General Jackson's conduct received in the United States? What scandal did some attempt to fasten on him? What was the course of action of Congress? How long did the provisional government continue?

command of West Florida, November, 1816, and
was expelled by General Andrew Jackson,
May, 1818. The provisional governor,
1818 Colonel King, retired to make way for the
May new Spanish governor, September, 1819.
Don José Maria Callava was the name of the
1819 latter, a knight who had won the cross of
Sept. the military order of Hermenegildo in the
Peninsula campaign. On the 17th of July,
1821 1821, General Jackson received from Gov-
July 17 ernor Callava the surrender of West Florida,
the last vestige of Spanish authority in the
peninsula claimed by Spain in virtue of Ponce de
Leon's discovery, March 27, 1513.

Q. For what purpose did the arrival of the Spanish seem to be? Who succeeded Governor Kindelan in East Florida? Give the governors in West Florida after Maurique. When did Spain give up the last vestige of her authority in Florida?

CHAPTER XVI.

PURCHASE OF THE FLORIDAS—JACKSON APPOINTED PROVISIONAL GOVERNOR—TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT.

NEGOTIATIONS FOR FLORIDA. In 1816 Monroe, at that time Secretary of State, suggested to the Spanish ambassador, Don Onis, the exchange of the
1816 Floridas for a part of Louisiana lying next to Texas. Nothing came of this proposi-
1817 tion. During the next year Monroe, having now become President, proposed that Spain should cede the provinces to the United States in settlement of the claims of the citizens of the latter government arising from losses inflicted by Indians dwelling on Spanish territory. A lengthy correspondence ensued between Don Onis and John Quincy Adams, Secretary of State; but again nothing resulted. The operations of Jackson did more to hurry on the negotiations than all the diplomacy at Washington, or at Madrid, for they proved clearly to Spain that to protect her territory and keep the Indians in check would require a large military force in the Floridas and would result in great expense, if she wished to abide by treaty obligations.

Q. What suggestion did Monroe make in 1816? What did he propose the following year? What was the result? How were the negotiations hurried on? What did Jackson prove to Spain? Where was the treaty of cession made?

While Jackson's campaign in Florida was under discussion in Congress Don Onis received 1819 instructions from his home government, and Feb. reopened negotiations, which resulted finally 22 in Adams and Onis signing a treaty of cession, February 22, 1819.

TREATY. Of the sixteen articles comprising the treaty the second related to the cession of East and West Florida, with all public property; the fifth granted freedom of religious worship; the sixth related to the admittance of Spanish subjects to all the rights and privileges of citizens of the United States; the seventh stipulated that the latter convey to Havana the Spanish troops, who were to withdraw within six months. The eighth article guaranteed that, "All the grants of land made before the 24th of January, 1818, by his Catholic majesty, or by his lawful authorities in the said territories, ceded by his majesty to the United States, shall be ratified and confirmed to the persons in possession of the lands, to the same extent that the same grants would be valid, if the territories had remained under the dominion of his Catholic majesty..... All grants made since the said 24th of January, 1818, when the first proposal on the part of his Catholic majesty for the cession of the Floridas was made, are hereby declared, and agreed to be, null and void". By the ninth article both powers agreed to relinquish the claims of the citizens of each against the other; but the United States was to pay for damages to private property in Jackson's campaign. According to the eleventh article the United States agreed to make satisfaction to her own citizens for their claims on Spain, to an amount not exceeding

five millions of dollars.* Spanish vessels were by the fifteenth article to enter the ports of Pensacola and St. Augustine for twelve years without paying the duties exacted of foreign ships, provided they were carrying cargoes of Spanish goods or productions. The sixteenth article stipulated that the treaty should be ratified by both powers within six months, or sooner, if possible.

RATIFICATION OF THE TREATY. Ratification of the treaty by the Senate of the United States occurred immediately, but Spain hesitated. Much
1819 feeling was aroused, for it was feared in
Feb. America that foreign powers were opposed
25 to the annexation; but when the President
announced that Spain's course was not ap-
1820 proved by any European power, public
Mar. 8 opinion manifested itself in a resolution re-
ported March 8, 1820, to take possession of
1820 West Florida. But wiser counsel prevailed,
Oct. 24 and after much correspondence the king of
Spain signed the treaty on the 24th of Octo-
ber, 1820.

LAND GRANTS. Since 1793 several royal orders had come out from Spain authorizing the governors to grant land to settlers on condition of some public service or actual occupation. Numerous tracts were thus apportioned in the northwestern part of the State

Q. To what did the second article of the treaty relate? the fifth and sixth? the seventh? What did the eighth article guarantee? What was agreed on in the ninth article? in the eleventh? How much did Florida actually cost? What was stipulated in the fifteenth article?

* The actual sum paid was \$6,480,768.

and between the St. Johns River and the Atlantic Ocean, as well as more scattered grants in other portions. These were in some instances extensive, as the Arredondo grant in Alachua district, and that of Miranda on Tampa Bay. *Forbes' Purchase* was a large tract lying on the eastern bank of the Apalachicola, obtained by purchase from the Indians, with the consent of Spain. According to the eighth article of the treaty, "all grants of land made before the 24th of January, 1818", were to be valid; but after the treaty had been signed by Adams and Onis, it was found that Spain insisted on the validity of the grants of the Duke of Alagon, the Count of Puñon Rostro, and Don Pedro de Vargas, which comprised nearly all the territory not hitherto apportioned in East and West Florida. On the contention of the United States that her plenipotentiary had signed the treaty with the understanding that these grants were to be considered cancelled, the king of Spain added a clause nullifying the titles.

The lack of precision in the titles and in the surveying of the original grants afterwards caused much trouble to settlers. But the greatest hardships endured were those of claimants for damages, which the United States was to pay on behalf of Spain. After thirty years they were paid. The total cost of Florida has been \$6,489,768; and 59,268 square miles of territory were added to the national public domain.

Q. What was the final article? How soon was the treaty ratified? Why was feeling aroused? What resolution was reported? When did the King of Spain sign the treaty? Give an account of lands granted by the Spanish governors. What was the Forbes' Purchase? What grants were to be valid?

ALABAMA WISHES TO ANNEX WEST FLORIDA. The constitutional convention of Alabama in 1820 petitioned Congress to annex West Florida to 1820 that State, to which by nature it belongs.

“But they were silenced, as if by the imperious decree of fate that the Perdido boundary should be, and forever remain, a monument of d’Arriola’s diligence in reaching the Gulf coast three years (1696) before d’Iberville (1699).” Attempts have been made in recent years to complete what the Alabama convention of 1820 proposed, but without success.

JACKSON GOVERNOR: TRANSFER OF THE FLORIDAS. As if to atone for the criticism and censure Jackson underwent on account of his campaign of 1818, the President appointed him provisional governor of the two Floridas until a territorial government should be formed. This can be the only explanation of his accepting the post of governor of an unimportant territory. He accepted the offer as an atonement for his past wrongs.

The transfer of the two provinces was to take place at St. Augustine, July 10, 1821, for East 1821 Florida, at Pensacola seven days later, for July West Florida. General and Mrs. Jackson 10, 17 arrived at Pensacola several days before the date appointed for the change of flags; and in

Q. What was discovered after the treaty was signed? How much land did these grants comprise? Why did the King of Spain nullify them? What caused trouble to the settlers? How many years did it take the United States to pay? How many square miles of land in Florida? Tell of Alabama’s petition to Congress. Who was appointed to the office of governor over the new territory?

their train followed numerous office-seekers, who were, however, doomed to disappointment, as the July President, and not General Jackson, made the 17 appointments. On the morning of the 17th Jackson and Governor Callava signed the paper delivering to the United States the province of West Florida, with all government property and the public archives. A similar ceremony had been performed at St. Augustine seven days before this, Don José Coppinger acting for Spain, and Colonel Robert Butler for the United States. There was here a difference of opinion as to whether artillery was to be considered public property, and whether public archives relating to private property should be surrendered. Each commissioner laid the case before his own government. Part of the archives carried to Havana were afterwards brought back.

The military and such of the citizens as did not wish to remain left immediately for Cuba on American vessels. But Callava and his staff lingered to enjoy the hospitality of the American officers and their families, which was interrupted in an unfortunate manner.

VIDAL AFFAIR. A paper involving a small sum belonging to a certain Nicolas Vidal, accidentally became mixed with the documents to be carried away

Q. Why did Jackson accept the office? What were the dates of the transfer? Who followed in General Jackson's train? How were they disappointed? Tell about the transfer of West and East Florida. What difficulty was met in East Florida? Where did the Spaniards go? Who remained behind? What paper became mixed with the documents of Callava?

by Callava. A woman claiming to be Vidal's heir
appealed to Alcalde Brackenridge, and the
1821 latter at once demanded the paper from Do-
mingo Sousa, Callava's agent, who referred
him to his principal. Brackenridge, however, re-
ported the case to Jackson. The general at once or-
dered Sousa imprisoned, and Callava brought before
him, who, protesting against the outrage, was sent
after his agent by the now furious governor. In the
meantime the alcalde broke open the Spaniard's boxes,
and secured the offending paper. Next day the pris-
oners were released, when Callava proceeded to Wash-
ington to lay the case before the authorities. Some
of the Spanish officers in Pensacola published a pro-
test against the outrage, and this led the governor to
issue a proclamation ordering them to quit the pro-
vince within four days, as disturbers of the peace.

JACKSON AND THE FIRE. The course of the new
governor inspired the citizens of Pensacola with dread
of his temper. In consequence an amusing incident
occurred one day. Quite a crowd had collected on
the Public Square to witness a fire, and Jackson, to
urge on those who were trying to extinguish it, made
a yelling appeal; but to his amazement the whole
crowd fled. Not understanding his language, they
imagined that he was ordering them to disperse, and
so took to their heels.

Q. Tell about Brackenridge's conduct. How did General
Jackson act? Give Callava's conduct and that of certain
Spanish officers. What proclamation did Jackson issue?
Relate the story of the fire.

DEPARTURE OF JACKSON. Mrs. Jackson yearned to return to her home at the Hermitage, and 1821 it was with gladness that she wrote to a Oct. friend that her husband regarded his trip to Florida as "a wild goose chase". Their return to Tennessee took place in October.

TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT. Military government remained in force till the 3rd of March, 1822, when an act of Congress created civil authority. East Florida and West Florida were united, with as yet no fixed capital. Jackson had already attempted to make a more equal division of the two Floridas by extending the eastern boundary of West Florida to the Suwanee River. The governor, who was to be appointed by the President, was to be assisted by a council of thirteen of the most discreet men of the territory. His salary was to be two thousand five hundred dollars. Judges, two in number, one for East and the other for West Florida, were paid a salary of fifteen hundred dollars. Members of the council received three dollars per day during attendance, to which was added mileage. Local officers were placed under the power of appointment of the governor, who was himself commander-in-chief of the militia of the territory and superintendent of Indian affairs. Laws relating to crime, commerce, and navigation were also enacted.

William P. Duval, of Kentucky, was commissioned by the President first governor of the territory of

Q. How did Mrs. Jackson write that her husband regarded his trip to Florida? How long was he in Florida? When was civil government established? Give the changes in East and West Florida. How was the governor to be assisted? What was the salary of the judges and of the members of council? What powers did the governor have?

Florida. The first session of the legislative council was held in 1822 at Pensacola; but, yellow fever breaking out, it was transferred to the Fifteen-mile house, fifteen miles north of the town, where the Florida statutes of 1822 were enacted. Civil proceedings, marriages, wills, militia, revenue, etc., were regulated by these ordinances. St. Augustine was designated as the second place of meeting, for 1823.

WILLIAM P. DUVAL. Governor William P. Duval was born in Virginia in 1784 of Huguenot family, his great-grandfather having emigrated from France. His grandfather was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses, and his father was a major in the Revolutionary War. As a boy, William moved to Kentucky, studied law, and later was sent to Congress in 1812, serving till March 2, 1815, after which he practiced law in his adopted State. President Monroe appointed him governor of Florida in 1822, and he was continued in office by succeeding presidents till 1834. In 1848 Governor Duval moved to Texas. Six years later a paralytic stroke brought on his death, while he was visiting in Washington. James K. Paulding has portrayed him in fiction as "Nimrod Wildfire", and Washington Irving as "Ralph Ringwood".

Q. Who was the first governor of Florida Territory? Where was the first meeting of the legislative council held? the second? Tell of Governor Duval's family. Tell of his own early life. How long was he governor of Florida? Tell of his death. How has he been portrayed in fiction?



GOV. WILLIAM P. DUVAL: 1822-34.

CHAPTER XVII.

FLORIDA AS A TERRITORY—SITE OF THE CAPITAL—GROWTH—BANKS—TROUBLE WITH THE INDIANS.

SECOND SESSION OF COUNCIL: CHANGE IN GOVERNMENT. According to the decree of Congress the second session of the legislative council was 1823 held in May, 1823, at some place other than May Pensacola. St. Augustine in East Florida was selected as place of meeting. On this occasion the council appointed Dr. William H. Simmons of St. Augustine and John Lee Williams of Pensacola commissioners to select a site for a permanent capital.

By an act approved March 3, 1823, Congress amended the act of the preceding year, repealing certain ordinances of the council and regulating the civil government to suit better the requirements of the territory.

TALLAHASSEE. After examination the commissioners, Simmons and Williams, selected as a site for the State capital the old Indian fields at the former Seminole town of Tallahassee (*old town*),—a name that was retained to swell the list of harmonious titles of

Q. Where was the second meeting of the legislative council held? What commission was appointed? Where did the commissioners select the site of the capital? What does Tallahassee mean? When was the first meeting of the council held at Tallahassee?

towns and streams and lakes, almost the only relics of the former inhabitants of the flowery land. Near Tallahassee there was then a beautiful cascade, which has since disappeared. The choice of the commissioners was approved by the council, and the
1824 first meeting of that body at Tallahassee was
Dec. held in December, 1824, it is said, in a log
21 cabin in the southeastern corner of the
grounds around the present capital. This
latter building was erected by the United States in
1844 at a cost of eighty-five thousand dollars.

GRANT OF A TOWNSHIP OF LAND TO LAFAYETTE.
During Lafayette's visit to America in 1824 Congress
voted the great Frenchman the sum of two
1824 hundred thousand dollars and a grant of a
township of land from the public domain, in
1825 return for his assistance during the Revolutionary War. A notice from the "Pensacola Gazette" of the following year states that Colonel McKee had arrived in town on his way to select the land. The township selected lay in Jefferson county, at no great distance from the capital of the territory.

GROWTH OF THE TERRITORY. Immigration flowed in rapidly from the Southern States, from the Bahama Islands, and even from the North Atlantic States, especially to the northern part of East Florida. But a great drawback to settlement was the hostility of the Seminoles, who had in Spanish times occupied the two Floridas, except only a small part of the land along the coast. However, a number of towns sprang rapidly into existence.

Palatka was founded in 1821 by James Marver and two other men, Hines and Woodruff, who established

here a trading-post. Marver was greatly beloved by the Indians. By 1850 Palatka had many
1821 handsome residences, but its commercial importance began with the coming of the railroad in 1886.

Jacksonville, whose aboriginal name was Wacca Pilatka, called "Cow Ford" by the English,
1816 began in 1816 by the removal of L. G. Hogan
1822 to the land which belonged to his Spanish wife, Doña Maria Suavez. In 1822 the name Jacksonville, given in honor of General Andrew Jackson, was bestowed on the newly laid out town.

In 1823 a colony of Scotch Presbyterians settled at
1823 Euchee Anna in the Euchee valley in West Florida.

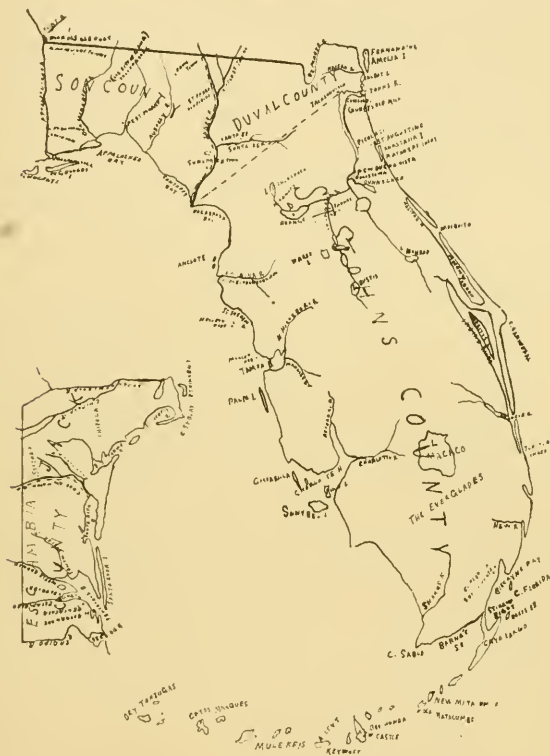
The first house was erected in Tallahassee in 1824; the town was incorporated in the following
1824 year; and the building of the first capitol was begun in January, 1826.

Monticello was surveyed in 1828; and in the following year Marianna was incorporated.
1828 Twelve months later Apalachicola became a city. Key West, which was made a naval station, was incorporated and laid off into lots the
1829-30 same year as Marianna (1829). The town
1836 of St. Josephs was begun in 1836.

At the first meeting of the legislative council, 1822, the territory was divided into four counties, *Escambia*, embracing the country between the Perdido

Q. Where was the meeting held? Give the age and cost of the present capitol. Give an account of the township granted to Lafayette. Tell of immigration to Florida. What was a great drawback to settlement? Give an account of Palatka.

and Apalachicola; *Jackson*, between the Apalachicola and the Suwannee; *Duval*, north of a line from "Cow Ford" to mouth of the Suwannee, and extending from this river to the ocean; *Saint Johns*, the peninsula south



From Tanner's American Atlas.

FLORIDA IN 1823.

of the line just mentioned. These four were afterwards subdivided. By 1837 there were twenty counties in all. In 1887 a large number of new counties were formed by an act of the legislature.

Various canals throughout the territory were projected, and a large ship canal across the northern part of the peninsula was planned, to cut off the 1829 dangerous voyage around the Florida reefs.

In 1829 a report was submitted to Congress by United States Engineers of a route for a canal between St. Marks and Fernandina, but it was not considered practicable. Routes were surveyed again in 1854 and 1878.

Tobacco, of which so much is now said, 1828 was introduced from Cuba in 1828, although it was suggested during British rule that such tobacco might be profitably raised.

General R. K. Call, one of the shapers of the commonwealth, as he delighted to speak of himself, 1835-6 built the third railroad in the United States, from Tallahassee to St. Marks. Before the outbreak of the Civil War these few miles of road were the best paying in the whole country.

SOCIAL LIFE. Society in Florida during these early years of American ownership was refined in spite of the frontier life. Large, well cultivated plantations were scattered over the country between Tallahassee and Jacksonville, and the possessors enjoyed each other's refined intercourse. Among the names that occur as guarantees of culture are those of General

Q. What was the aboriginal name of Jacksonville? When did Jacksonville begin? In whose honor was it named? What colony settled at Euchee Anna? Tell of Tallahassee. Mention the names of other towns founded at this period. How many counties were there at first? Give the position of the counties. What is to be said of the making of other counties?

and Mrs. R. K. Call, Judge Thomas Randall, Governor W. P. Duvall, Colonel Gadsden, Mrs. "Florida" White, Mrs. Nutall, and the family of William Wirt. To these should be added the family of Colonel Bird Willis, who removed from Virginia to Tallahassee in 1827, and whose daughter Kate married Prince Achille Murat, son of the king of Naples. Prince Murat had been in the territory only a short time and had purchased a plantation not far from the township bestowed on Lafayette. The graves of the Prince and the Princess are to be seen at Tallahassee.

BANKS. During Jackson's administration many "wild cat" banks were established in all sections of the United States. Florida had her share of these, and, it must be confessed, not to her credit. Of the some ten or twelve banks established at this period the following are the most noteworthy because of their connection with the repudiation of Florida's just obligations at the time she became a State.

In 1831 the Bank of Pensacola was chartered with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, 1831 and began business on November 28, 1833.

Early in 1835 the legislature authorized the increase of its capital stock to two and a half millions of dollars, and the purchase by the bank of stock in the Alabama, Georgia, and Florida Railway. A further issue of five hundred thousand dollars of bonds was authorized. These were to be indorsed by the

Q. Why was a canal across Florida thought necessary? What route was surveyed in 1829? How many more have been surveyed? When was tobacco introduced? What can you say of the third railroad in the United States? What was the condition of society? How did the people live? Give the names of some of the early inhabitants.

governor in behalf of the territory, which was secured from loss, as was supposed, by a mortgage on the bank, including its railroad shares. By 1843 the railroad failed, the bank ceased to exist, and the territory's mortgage proved worthless.

The Union Bank was chartered in 1833 with an authorized capital of three millions of dollars, 1833 raised by the sale of territorial bonds. Stockholders were not to pay down any part of their subscriptions, but to secure them by mortgages on lands and slaves. The bonds were sold mostly in Europe in 1834, '38, '39, at a discount of from three to ten per cent. This was contrary to the charter, as it stipulated that they should not be sold below par. Interest was paid by negotiating new bonds. In 1837, two years after it began business, the bank suspended specie payment, and in 1842 failed to pay interest on its bonds.

Although Congress did not in June, 1836, approve the charter of the Southern Life Insurance and Trust Company, chartered February 14, 1835, yet 1836 the company began business, insuring life, receiving money on deposit, buying, discounting, and selling drafts, promissory notes, and bills of exchange. The capital stock was placed at two millions of dollars, with privilege to raise to four millions. Notes could be issued to the full amount

Q. Tell about Prince Achille Murat and his wife. What is to be said of "wild cat" banks in Florida? How much was the capital of the Bank of Pensacola? How were five hundred thousand dollars of its bonds indorsed? What security did the territory have? What became of the bank? Give the capital of the Union Bank. What payment were the stockholders to make?

of the paid-in stock, as also certificates of one thousand dollars each, indorsed by the governor of the territory, which were secured by a privilege granted the marshal to seize enough of the bank's money and property to satisfy demands against it. In 1837 Congress approved the bank's charter, and at the same time, and in the following year, gave it greater liberty. But when the institution failed, as it speedily did, nothing was found for the marshal to seize; and the territory was confronted with obligations to the amount of four hundred thousand dollars.

BEGINNING OF TROUBLE WITH THE SEMINOLES.

Before the descent of Jackson in 1818 the Seminoles occupied all East Florida, having towns of considerable size, and after their defeat they continued to hold the province, though no longer dwelling in large communities as before. They also still continued to harbor runaway slaves, which was a constant source of disagreement between them and the planters. Had not the Seminoles been in possession of Florida, it

would have been settled more rapidly. In

1822 1822 they numbered about four thousand, of all ages and sexes, and had among them a thousand negroes. Besides the governor, who was Superintendent of Indian Affairs, the President appointed as a special Indian agent, Colonel Gad Humphreys, who took up his residence at Fort King

Q. How were the bonds sold? How long did the bank exist? What business did the Southern Life Insurance and Trust Company conduct? Give an account of its stock. How was the territory secured? How did Congress act towards the bank? Give the amount the territory was held responsible for? How had the war of 1818 affected the Seminoles? What caused disagreement between them and the settlers?

among his protégés, and championed their rights until 1830.

Almost immediately after the purchase of Florida the President was petitioned to restrict the Indians within narrower limits, in order that the territory might be opened to settlers. Colonel Humphreys at 1823 once set about gathering the chiefs to treat Sept. on this subject. Finally, on the 18th of 18 18 September, 1823, he succeeded in collecting a considerable number at "Camp Moultrie", six miles below St. Augustine, where they agreed to move below a line about twenty miles south of Micanopy, on payment of six thousand dollars in cash and an annuity of five thousand dollars. Six chiefs had to be further conciliated. No white man was to enter their territory without permission, and the Indian was to keep within bounds on penalty of being flogged if caught outside. They did not keep within bounds, and they sheltered fugitive negroes, though in the treaty they had promised to return them to their owners. As settlements of the whites increased, a desire arose to remove the Indians entirely.

At a talk near McKenzie's Pond in 1828 the Indians proposed a delegation of their most 1828 trusted chiefs to examine the lands west of the Mississippi, which the United States would grant them, if they wished to move there of their own free will. This proposition being rejected

Q. Give the number of Seminoles in 1822. Who was Superintendent of Indian Affairs? Where did he reside? What petition was sent to the President? Give an account of the treaty of "Camp Moultrie". How was the treaty kept? What desire arose as the settlements increased? What did the Indians propose at McKenzie's Pond?

by the War Department, the Seminoles became discouraged, and soon announced their intention of remaining where they were.

Another cause of dispute between the red man and the settler lay in the ownership of cattle, of which the Indians possessed a large number; and furthermore they occupied the best grazing country. About this time the United States government sanctioned a most disgraceful scheme for purchasing the fugitive slaves from their protectors. Since traders could, by intoxicating their red customer, obtain from him his peltries and manufactures for a mere song, it was proposed to secure the runaway negroes in a similar manner; but the humanity of the country would sanction no such procedure. A feeling of uneasi-

1830 ness began to pervade whites and Indians alike. Colonel Humphreys was removed in 1830, because he was too strong a champion of his charges, and Major Phagan took his place, remaining agent till 1833.

In 1832 Major Phagan succeeded in collecting a number of influential chiefs at Payne's landing, where they concluded a treaty with the commissioner, Colonel James Gadsden, agreeing to
1832
May 9 send certain of their influential chiefs, with their negro interpreter Abraham, to the territory promised them by the United States; and if *they* were satisfied with the land, and of the favorable disposition of the Creeks to unite again with them, the treaty should bind them to migrate thither. The *they* was taken by the Seminoles to mean themselves, but by President Jackson to refer to the chiefs of the reconnoitering party. Union with the Creeks was disliked

by the Florida Indians, as they were runaways from the former nation. Moreover, there was
1832 danger that the Creeks would take from them the fugitive negroes, who had intermarried with the Seminoles and had great influence over them.

From September, 1832, to the following March, the deputation of chiefs with Colonel Phagan examined the territory allotted them between the Canadian River and its North Fork, and in the treaty of Fort Gibson expressed themselves as satisfied with the country, and stated their readiness to remove thither. But on their return the body of the nation refused to abide by the decision of their chiefs. American officers then in Florida gave it as their opinion that the chiefs would not have consented to migrate, if they had not been tampered with. (See map on p. 267.)

The Indians were deeply stirred by the preparations to remove them by force. Major Phagan deemed it prudent to resign the post of agent, and was succeeded by General Wiley Thompson. Colonel Duncan L. Clinch took command of the United
1835 States troops. Charley Emathla, an old
Oct. chief, drew upon himself the hostility of the remaining Seminoles, because he determined to abide by the treaty of Payne's Landing, and not

Q. What effect did the rejection of this proposition have on the Seminoles? Give another cause of trouble. Give the proposed scheme of purchasing the fugitive slaves. Why was Colonel Humphreys replaced by Major Phagan? Where did Major Phagan collect the influential chiefs in 1832? What treaty was made? How was the word *they* understood? Why did the Florida Indians dislike union with the Creeks?

long afterwards while he was gathering his band for removal, he was shot by Osceola and a number of Miccosukies. The gold found on him Osceola would allow none to touch, saying that it was the price of the red man's blood.

At one of the consultations held by General Thompson this same Osceola, afterwards to become so famous, drew his knife, and striking it into the table before him, cried, "This is the only treaty I will ever make with the whites!" He was at this time merely a sub-chief.



Giddings' Exiles.

OSCEOLA.

OSCEOLA. When General Andrew Jackson broke the power of the Red Sticks at the battle of the Horse-shoe Bend in 1813, the remnant of these brave

warriors took refuge among the Seminoles. With them fled a Creek mother and her son, a boy of about thirteen or fourteen, Asseheholar, or "Black Drink", known also as Powell, from the name of his father, an Indian trader. At the outbreak of the war (1835), he

Q. What danger was there? Where was the land allotted to the Seminoles? How did the chiefs express their opinion of it? How did the body of the nation act? What did certain officers think of the chief's consent? Who succeeded Major Phagan? Tell of Charley Emathla and of his murder. What treaty did Osceola declare he would make with the whites?

was thirty-one years of age, resolute and manly, of a clear, fresh, and engaging countenance, and as a leader cautious and bold. He broke up every attempt at negotiation. He was the guiding spirit of the war, which may be said to have begun from the time when his wife, daughter of a Seminole chief and a negro woman, was seized as a slave. Osceola then vowed vengeance, and at the time behaved so violently that General Thompson had him put in irons until he confessed repentance. His subsequent murder of General Thompson, his own captive, and his death at Fort Moultrie, S. C., belong to a later chapter.

Q. To what nation did Osceola belong? What does his name mean? Describe him at the outbreak of the war. What may be said to be the beginning of the war?

CHAPTER XVIII.

SEMINOLE WAR—DADE'S MASSACRE—BATTLE OF THE WITHLACOOCHEE—GENERAL SCOTT—GENERAL JESUP—CAPTURE OF OSCEOLA.

DECISION OF THE UNITED STATES TO REMOVE THE SEMINOLES. General Thompson reported in 1834 that the Indians were buying great quantities of powder, and had probably forty or fifty kegs. A few months later an order was transmitted to him not to sell them any more. Osceola, when refused, became indignant, and in a burst of rage exclaimed, "Am I a negro—a slave? My skin is dark, but not black! I am an Indian, a Seminole! The white man shall not make me black! I will make the white man red with blood, and blacken him with the sun and rain, where the wolf shall smell of his bones, and the buzzard live upon his flesh"! General Jackson sent a "talk". But the Indians had heard so many "talks", and seen so few soldiers, that they despised the white man as weak, for the guiding spirits were too young to remember the terrible punishment inflicted on the nation in 1818. It became evident that if the Seminoles were to be moved from Florida, force would have to be employed; but from the first the War Department made a mistake in supposing that the whole number of warriors was only four or five hundred, and in making preparations accordingly.

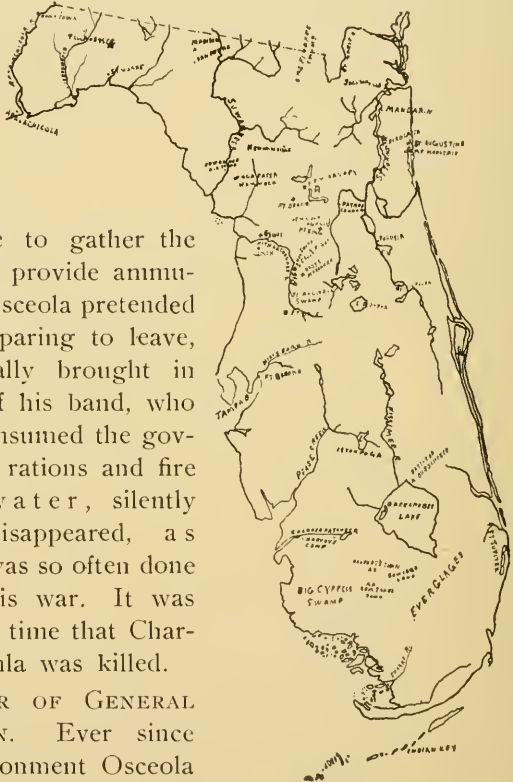
Q. How much powder had the Indians bought? What did Osceola exclaim when refused? How did the Indians regard "talks"? What mistake did the War Department make?

Strangely enough, the authorities underestimated the power of resistance of a Seminole.

At a council held in April, 1835, General Thompson very unwisely struck from the lists of chiefs Sam Jones (*Arpika*), Jumper, Micanopy, Alligator, and Black Dirt, who refused to join the other chiefs in agreeing to migrate. In reality, this agreement was merely a subterfuge to

gain time to gather the crops and provide ammunition. Osceola pretended to be preparing to leave, and actually brought in seventy of his band, who having consumed the government's rations and fire water, silently disappeared, as was so often done during this war. It was about this time that Charley Emathla was killed.

MURDER OF GENERAL THOMPSON. Ever since his imprisonment Osceola had been thirsty for re-



SEMINOLE WAR, 1835 1842.

venge, though he quietly dissembled all appearance of his intention. In the latter part of December he lay in ambush near the agency of Fort King, seeking for a chance to shoot General Thompson; but for two or three days no opportunity presented itself. At last,

however, on the 28th the doomed agent and
Dec. Lieutenant Constantine Smith strolled out
28 from the fort to enjoy an after-dinner cigar;
then every Indian rifle spoke, and both fell
pierced by many balls. Their bodies were mutilated
and scalped. Osceola then murdered the employees
at the sutler's, and after firing the building containing
the scalped bodies, hastily departed to join his con-
federates at the Big Wahoo Swamp, on the Withla-
cchochee, but arrived too late for the massacre of Major
Dade's command. The garrison, ignorant of the true
number of the Seminoles, had remained in
1835 the fort, afraid to send out aid to General
Thompson and Lieutenant Smith.

MASSACRE OF MAJOR DADE'S COMMAND. Major
Francis L. Dade left Tampa for Fort King, one hun-
dred and thirty miles distant to the north-
Dec. east, December 21, with one hundred and
21 thirty-nine men, one six-pounder field piece,
and a light wagon containing ten days' pro-
visions. As no one knew the route, Major Dade se-
cured the services of Lewis, a slave of Antonio Pach-
eco, described as faithful and trustworthy; but Lewis
informed the Indians of the intended march, and these

Q. What unwise thing did General Thompson do? What was the agreement in reality? Give Osceola's conduct. Why did he lie in wait near Fort King? Give an account of the murder of General Thompson. Where did Osceola then go? How had the garrison at Fort King behaved?

selected the Big Wahoo Swamp as a place of rendezvous. On the 28th as the little company marched along the road near the Withlacoochee in a Dec. country covered with palmettoes, a sudden 28 volley from the concealed savages laid low one half of the devoted band. The remainder quickly rallied, and with the six-pounder drove the enemy over a small hill. For three-quarters of an hour the fighting ceased. In these precious minutes, a small triangular breastwork of trunks of trees was hastily constructed, when the foe came sweeping down once more to the attack. And soon every white man was stretched out on the leaf-covered ground, two only escaping to tell of the dreadful massacre, in which on a clear day, in open woods, a company of trained soldiers was almost annihilated by a band of painted savages. The negro Lewis pretended to fall at the first fire, and thus escaped to his Indian friends.

Alligator stated that one hundred and eighty Seminoles were engaged in this conflict. It is asserted that after the fight was over a band of fifty negroes rushed upon the field and mutilated the corpses and 1835 hacked to death the wounded and dying.

News of this disaster did not reach General Clinch at Fort Drane for some time, though it was known among the negroes of St. Augustine within twenty-four hours; at least they knew that the whites had met with some calamity.

Q. Give the size of Major Dade's command. Who acted as guide? What information did he give the Indians? Where did these make their rendezvous? Give an account of the first attack. What breastwork was hastily constructed? Give the result of the battle. How did Lewis escape? How many Seminoles were there? What is said of a band of negroes?

BATTLE OF THE WITHLACOOCHEE. On the death of Charley Emathla General (formerly Dec. *Colonel*) Clinch called for volunteers; and 15 several companies joined General Call at Newnansville, who by the 15th of December united with General Clinch. As the troops were only enlisted for thirty days, this officer at once put Dec. them in motion for the Withlacoochee, with- 31 out any knowledge, however, of the disaster to Major Dade's command, and on the 31st had crossed that stream with some two hundred of his men, when they were fired on by a band of Seminoles led by Osceola and Alligator. A hammock protected the front of the Indians, who fought bravely, and beat back two charges of the soldiers. A third charge routed them. They fled, leaving five dead and several wounded: the whites had four killed and forty wounded.

General Clinch returned to Fort Drane, where the volunteers disbanded, and he was left with one hundred and fifty men to hold Forts King, Drane, and Micanopy. Settlements in the interior were broken up, and the inhabitants fled to the larger towns.

GENERAL GAINES. When General Gaines at New Orleans heard of the destruction of Major Dade's command, without waiting for orders, considering the



SCENE OF EARLY BATTLES.

gravity of the situation required immediate action, he sailed for Tampa, and arrived at Fort Brooke
1836 at the head of Hillsboro Bay on the 10th of
Feb. February. Three days later he set out for
10 Fort King, passing on his way the fatal field
where Major Dade's men had been annihilated.
Feb. Arriving at Fort King, he found himself
13 without provisions. Nothing was left
but to return. Making a detour to display
his force, he was seeking a ford on the Withlacoochee
below the place he had crossed in coming, when the
Indians opened fire from the opposite bank, so furiously
as to preclude any idea of forcing a passage.
General Gaines was reduced to a state of siege, and
almost of starvation before General Clinch arrived and
took command. The troops were marched to Fort
Drane.

In a parley with Captain Hitchcock of General Gaine's command, Osceola, Jumper, and Alligator agreed to make peace, if allowed to occupy the country south of the Withlacoochee.

GENERAL SCOTT IN COMMAND. President Jackson now ordered General Scott to take command of the Florida War. A beautiful campaign was planned on paper. One force was to move from Fort Drane, another from Volusia on the St. Johns, and a third from Tampa Bay, all to unite at the forks of the Withlacoochee, where it was expected the Indians would

Q. How is the report of the massacre said to have travelled? What officers marched to the Withlacoochee? Give an account of the battle. Give the loss on both sides. How many men were left with General Clinch? What did the settlers do? What course of action did General Gaines adopt?

thus be cooped up. But General Scott did not know the ease with which they could slip through his lines. Not an Indian was caught. The Seminoles became more than ever convinced of the white man's weakness. General Scott was recalled; and General Jesup, who had been successful in compelling the Creeks to migrate from Alabama, was substituted in his place.

SUMMER OF 1836. As the heated term came on, the regular troops went into summer quarters; the volunteers returned home. Fort King was abandoned at the last of May, owing to the unhealthiness of the season; and in July the troops left Fort Drane, and Fort Micanopy in the following month. All the settlements east of the St. Johns and south of Picolata were destroyed. Express riders were constantly cut off, and within seventeen miles of Jacksonville the Johns family were murdered and their home burned.

OPERATIONS OF GENERAL CALL. General Jesup left the command of the troops for a time in the hands of General Call, as he had received no orders to direct his movements. General Armstrong was to join General Call with twelve hundred Tennesseans, who were operating in the Creek country. The first operations were around the Withlacoochee, but nothing was accomplished, owing to the high water in the streams. Reinforced by some regu-

Q. Give an account of his march to Fort King. Tell of his return. How was he relieved? On what did certain chiefs agree? Who now took command? Describe his plan to hem in the Seminoles. How did it succeed? Who took General Scott's place? What did the troops do during summer?

lars and a band of Creeks, in November General Call again entered the country of the Withlacoochee, broke up an Indian encampment, and in the Big Wahoo Swamp engaged a force of Seminoles for several hours but deemed it most prudent to retire.

So far the Indians clearly had the best of the fight, inasmuch as they had driven the citizens and soldiers out of the country.

WINTER CAMPAIGN: 1836-37. Soon after the battle at the Big Wahoo Swamp, General Thomas S. Jesup received the troops from General Call, which



SEMINOLE WARRIOR.

were increased to eight thousand men. Scarcity of provisions was no longer the cry as under former commanders. As the stronghold of the Indians was in the

Q. What forts were abandoned? Describe the condition of the country. Who acted for a time at the head of the troops? Who was to join him? Where were his first operations? Tell of the battle at the Big Wahoo Swamp. How did the Indians have the best of the fight? How many soldiers did General Jesup have? What had been a cause of trouble before?

swamps near the Withlacoochee, it was determined to drive them from that region; and so Colonel Foster advanced from Tampa, while General Jesup himself entered near the Big Wahoo Swamp. But the wary foe had moved. A prisoner informed the whites that the Seminoles had gone off in a southeasterly direction. Establishing Fort Dade in the district that had been the centre of the Indian settlement and dismissing the Tennesseans whose time had expired, the American commander started in pursuit of the fleeing Seminoles, going in the direction of the Everglades. Osarchee and his son were killed, but the main band escaped. Numerous herds of cattle fell into the hands of the soldiers, and women and children were captured. An Indian prisoner sent out brought

1837 in the interpreter Abraham, who had an interview with General Jesup and then returned Mar. 6 to persuade the chiefs to come in for a "talk".

On the 3rd of February he returned with Jumper, Alligator, and Halatoochie, who agreed to meet the general again at Fort Dade on the 6th of March, military operations to cease in the meantime.

King Philip and his son Coacoochee, better known as "Wild Cat", with four hundred warriors made an attack on Fort Mellon, on Lake Monroe, February 8, having heard there was only a small force in the place. In this they were mistaken. A strong garrison had been lately thrown into Fort Mellon without their

Q. What was the first move made by the new commander? Give an account of the pursuit of the Seminoles. What fort was established? Who was the Indian interpreter? What agreement was made with certain chiefs? Who attacked Fort Mellon? How had they made a mistake?

knowledge, and in consequence they were beaten back, but only after a stubborn fight of three hours.

CONFERENCE AT FORT DADE. The time for planting was passing, and there was no prospect
1837 that the war would stop. Accordingly, the Indians thought it best to keep the appointment with General Jesup. Several chiefs came in, who agreed to remove south of the Withlacoochee and to prepare to migrate at once to the West. General Jesup promised that the negroes should accompany the Seminoles, and that the United States should pay for the cattle and ponies of the Indians. Those who were willing to move were to assemble at a post ten miles from Tampa, under the protection of the United States.

GATHERING OF SEMINOLES. By the middle of May a considerable number gathered at the rendezvous, and twenty-five transports were ready to carry them to Arkansas. Osceola, King Philip, Coacoochee, and Coe Hadjo, encamped near Fort Mellon, drawing rations preparatory to departure. Settlers began to come back to their homes, and General Jesup declared the war to be at an end. As the Indians began to assemble, planters came to Tampa Bay to claim slaves which had run away, and even penetrated the Indian territory, so that an order had to be issued
May forbidding any white man to enter the Seminole country without permission of the War Department.

All went well so far. There were about seven hundred Seminoles, counting their families and negroes, at the rendezvous; when on the 2nd of June Osceola came to the camp and induced the whole party to seek

again their fastnesses in the Everglades. He told them that if they went on board the transports, the soldiers would cut their throats; and that smallpox, a terrible scourge to the Indian, had broken out in the fort.

Measles had, indeed, made their appearance.

1831 When Colonel Harney threatened that if they did not abide by the treaty, the United States would exterminate them, "Wild Cat" answered that the Great Spirit might exterminate them, but the pale faces could not; else, why had they not done so before? The number of Indians who had come in made it appear that they really intended to move, and were not merely seeking to gain time.

News of the scattering caused great consternation. Settlers fled again to the posts. Volunteers were called for from Georgia, Florida, Alabama, Louisiana, Tennessee, and Kentucky, and preparations were made for an active campaign as soon as the weather would permit. During the last campaign thirty of the enemy had been killed, and upwards of five hundred prisoners secured.

CAPTURE OF OSCEOLA. In September General Hernandez secured King Philip. Later Osceola and one hundred others, through the mediation of Sept. "Wild Cat", came in to the camp about twenty miles from St. Augustine, under a flag of truce; but on the ground that the Seminoles had capitulated at Fort Dade, and "that Osceola had

Q. Why did the Indians keep the appointment at Fort Dade? What did certain chiefs agree to? What did General Jesup promise? Where did the Seminoles gather? Who were at Fort Mellon? What did General Jesup declare about the war? Why was any white man forbidden to enter the Indian country? Who induced the Indians to scatter? How?

brought in his family to Fort Mellon, and received rations for his band", they were made prisoners by order of General Jesup, and carried to St. Augustine. Osceola was conveyed to Fort Moultrie, near Charleston, where all efforts to interest him in a new home failed. He pined away, and died of a broken heart. His tomb is marked by a monument just outside the principal gate of the fort.

ESCAPE OF "WILD CAT" FROM FORT MARION. "Wild Cat" was imprisoned in one of the dungeons of old Fort Marion, with one small window 1837 many feet above the ground. Reducing his body by means of medicines, he managed to squeeze through the embrasure on a dark night, and with his fellow prisoner escaped to his band. He subsequently became one of the leading chiefs, and aided materially in the removal of the Seminoles to the West.

CHEROKEE DELEGATION. At this time a delegation of Cherokees visited the Seminoles to try to persuade them to remove to the lands allotted them by the United States, and assured them that their lives and property would be protected. Coe Hadjo acted as guide. Micanopy, Cloud, and other chiefs came in, and agreed to carry out the treaty; but the warriors failed to appear. The seizure of certain chiefs who had been brought in by the Cherokees, so disgusted

Q. What reply did "Wild Cat" make to Colonel Harney? Why did it seem that the Indians really intended to move? What was the effect of the departure of the Indians? How many Indians were secured in the last campaign? Give an account of the capture of Osceola. Tell of his death. Where was "Wild Cat" imprisoned?

them that they gave up trying to end the war, and returned to their homes in the West.

PURSUIT OF SEMINOLES. The troops were in constant pursuit of the Indians. It thus became difficult for them to hide their women and children, or to transport food for them during the winter season. Many settlements in the northern border of the Everglades were broken up by General Eustis, who was enabled to penetrate these by means of posts and depots of supplies on the Upper St. Johns.

BATTLE OF OKEECHOBEE. Orders coming from General Jesup to find the enemy wherever he could, General Zachary Taylor set out on the 19th of December with a force of eleven hundred men, part of whom were Delaware and "bloody" Shawnee Indians who engaged in the war for the sake of plunder. His line of march lay towards the southwest, in the
1837 supposed direction of Sam Jones' camp. As
the army was on its way, Jumper and a few families came in, and were sent to Tampa to be transported. On the third day unmistakable signs of Indians were seen, and during that night and the following, care was taken to station a strong guard. All
the morning of the 24th the enemy kept ahead
Dec. just out of rifle reach, until before noon they
24 took position in a dense swamp covered by a morass through which ran a muddy stream.

Q. Give an account of his escape. What did he become? Why did a Cherokee delegation visit Florida? With what result? Why was it difficult for the Seminoles to care for their women and children? Where were many settlements broken up? Give General Taylor's force with which he set out. Whose camp was he looking for?

The volunteers sent in first, losing their commanding officer, Colonel Gentry, fled, and could not be reformed. The regulars under Colonel Thompson steadily advanced, but these, too, were forced to retire, one company having only four men unhurt. Colonel Foster, however, with the fourth infantry, succeeded in gaining the hammock, charged on the Seminoles, and drove them from the field. Nearly three hours the battle raged. Nine Indians were killed, and eleven



BATTLE OF OKEECHOBEE.

wounded, while on the ground lay twenty-six pale faces dead, and one hundred and twelve wounded.

This was the hardest fought contest of the war. Never again did the Seminoles fight a standing battle, but depended on the climate and the country to wage the war for them.

GENERAL JESUP SECURES MORE INDIANS. Many of the officers were worn out by a war that brought damage but no glory! Influenced by these,

General Jesup offered the Indians peace in February, 1838, but would not allow them to remain in the country unless the government should agree, which agreement he strongly urged in his report to the department. While awaiting the government's decision, the Indians assembled in camp near Fort Jupiter. Secretary of War Poinsett replied that the original treaty must be carried out. Knowing that if this decision should be learned every Indian would leave, General Jesup directed that all should be secured, and thus captured five hundred and seventeen Indians and one hundred and sixty-five negroes, who were removed to Tampa.

FURTHER MOVEMENTS. One expedition explored the extremity of the peninsula; another under Lieutenant-Colonel Bankhead entered the Everglades, captured a sub-chief and forty-seven of his followers, and hotly pursued Sam Jones, but failed to overtake him. In April General Jesup himself set out from Fort Jupiter to find the Miccosukies and Tallahasseees, who had assembled at the mouth of the Withlacoochee; but he was at this time superseded by General Taylor.

FIRST TRANSPORTATION TO THE WEST. In all twenty-four hundred Indians, seven hundred being warriors, had been taken up to this time, May 15, 1838; many villages had been destroyed, and large numbers of horses, cattle, and other stock captured or killed. The first

Q. Who surrendered? How far ahead did the Indians keep? What position did they take? Give an account of the battle. How long did it last? Give the loss on both sides. How did the Indians fight thereafter? Why did General Jesup offer the Indians peace? What did he urge in his report? Where did the Indians assemble?

band of twelve hundred and twenty-nine emigrated in May under the charge of Lieutenant Reynolds. A second party of three hundred and thirty followed in June. At New Orleans attempts were made by unscrupulous persons to get possession of certain negroes, who, it was claimed, had run away from their masters; but the attempts failed, though occasioning vexation and delay.

It will be remembered that a deputation of Seminoles once visited the lands in the West that were to be allotted them. But now, though the Indians were on their way, no provision had been made for them; and they would not join with the Creeks, as the government intended. Most generously did the Cherokees offer the emigrants a home with them until a separate and distinct district should be measured off for their use. Savages thus showed more humanity than the civilized white man. (See map on p. 267.)

Q. What did the Secretary of War reply to General Jesup? How many Indians and negroes were secured? Give some further movements of the troops. Who superseded General Jesup? What had the American troops accomplished? Give an account of the transportation of the Indians. What provision had been made for them?

CHAPTER XIX.

SEMINOLE WAR, CONTINUED—GENERAL TAYLOR
—MAJOR-GENERAL MACOMB—BLOODHOUNDS
—CAPTURE OF "WILD CAT"—THE "GALLANT"
WORTH—RETURN OF "WILD CAT"—END OF
WAR.

GENERAL ZACHARY TAYLOR IN COMMAND. The first act of any importance in General Taylor's period of command was the removal west of two hundred Apalaches from West Florida. The winter campaign

1838 of 1838-39 was
Oct. conducted on
the plan of a di-
vision of the country in-
to military districts, each
under the command of
an officer responsible for
the activity of the troops
under him. Active in-
deed were these; but few
Indians were seen. They
no longer gave battle.
Dividing' into small



GEN. ZACHARY TAYLOR.

bands, they eagerly eluded pursuit, and by their rapid movements appeared unexpectedly in most distant sections of the territory, almost in sight of Tallahassee even, and St. Augustine. General Taylor now determined to divide the country into small squares, each containing a block-house, under an officer

with a squad of infantry and mounted men, with orders to patrol his square every third May day. But the establishment of these was interrupted by the arrival of Major-General Macomb from Washington, May, 1839, "to make an arrangement with the Seminoles".

FAILURE OF GENERAL MACOMB. Runners were sent out to invite the chiefs to a conference. Halleck-Tustenuggee acted as spokesman for the Seminoles. For the present the Indians agreed to dwell below Pease Creek and Lake Okeechobee, and not to go out of bounds; and no white man was to enter the limits assigned them. General Macomb described in his report the joy manifested by them at the prospect of peace, and announced to the army, to the authorities, and to the citizens, that the war was ended with the Seminoles. Under such assurance the settlers began to return, hoping to plant at least part of a crop; General Macomb returned to Washington, and General Taylor was left in command. June passed off quietly, Every one was rejoicing at the return of peace when the very next month brought hostilities everywhere, and the territory was as insecure as before the arrival of General Macomb, who, in fact, merely protracted the war.

ATTACK ON COLONEL HARNEY. On the 22nd of July, at daybreak, Indians numbering two hundred and fifty under Checkika and Billy Bowlegs, fell

Q. What was the first act of importance under General Taylor? How was the winter campaign conducted? How did the Indians fight? Give General Taylor's second plan. How was this interrupted?

on Colonel Harney's camp near the Caloosahatchie, where he was erecting a trading-house. Out July of thirty men eighteen were killed. Colonel 22 Harney escaped himself only by swimming out to a fishing smack anchored in the river nearby. The two negro interpreters, Sandy and Samson, were taken captive, and the former was killed next day. Up to the time of the attack, the Indians had been very friendly, coming in every day and expressing their pleasure at the arrangements made 1839 with the government. As soon as the news of the massacre was heard at Fort Mellon, Lieutenant Hanson seized some thirty who had come in to trade.

The end of the war seemed as far off as it did three years before, and indeed farther, because the Indians had learned to despise troops whom they could so easily deceive.

BLOODHOUNDS. At last General Taylor consented to adopt the plan of hunting out the flitting bands 1840 of Seminoles by means of bloodhounds; but he said, "I wish it distinctly understood that my object in employing dogs is only to ascertain where the Indians can be found, not to worry them". Colonel Fitzpatrick, as agent, procured thirty-three of these animals from Cuba, and fifty-eight Spaniards to manage them, for they had been trained in the Spanish language. The cost of each animal was one hundred

Q. Give the agreement between General Macomb and the Indians. What did he say of the Indians? What effect did this report have? How long did peace last? What effect did General Macomb have on the war? Give an account of the attack on Colonel Harney's camp. How had the Indians acted before the attack?

and fifty-one dollars and seventy-two cents. But the scheme failed; the dogs had been trained to track negroes, and would not notice the trail of an Indian.

MURDER OF DOCTOR PERRINE. A body of Spanish Indians dwelling in the extremity of the peninsula, urged to hostility by the Seminoles, on the Aug. 7 7th of August attacked the settlement on Indian Key, where a distinguished botanist, Dr. Perrine, was engaged in raising tropical fruits. He was killed in an upper room of his dwelling; but his wife and children escaped to a vessel in the harbor, to which others also succeeded in making their way.

GENERAL ARMISTEAD RELIEVES GENERAL TAYLOR. Having now been in command for two years, General Taylor asked to be relieved; and 1840 Brigadier-General Armistead was appointed in his stead. Matters went on as before; expeditions were as fruitless as ever; and as swiftly came death from an invisible foe. A delegation of Seminoles came from the West to exert their influence towards the transportation of the others; but nothing came of it.

FURTHER HOSTILITIES. While Mrs. Montgomery, wife of Major Montgomery, was travelling from Micanopy under a military escort, she was struck from her horse by a shot from a hammock near the road. Cosa-Tustenuggee, fearing the consequences of this act, surrendered, and his entire band of thirty-two warriors and sixty women and children were sent be-

Q. What did Lieutenant Hanson do at Fort Mellon? Why did the end of the war seem farther than ever? For what were bloodhounds to be used? How many hounds were secured? What was their cost? Why did the scheme fail? Relate the circumstance of Dr. Perrine's murder.

yond the Mississippi. In consequence of this murder orders came from Washington for a more vigorous prosecution of the war, and these orders were shortly followed by an appropriation by Congress of one million of dollars. Indians began to appear in their old haunts on the Ocklockonce, on the Withlacoochee, and in Okefinokee Swamp. As Waxehadjo, a leader in killing express riders and travellers, was roasting the head of one of his victims near Tampa Bay, a company of dragoons came up, drove him into a pond, and there killed him.

In December Colonel Harney made an incursion into the hitherto unexplored region below Pease Creek, which was held by Billy Bowlegs, the

Dec. prophet, and Shiver and Shakes. Checkika, chief of the Spanish Indians, was killed. This expedition so intimidated the Indians that they resorted to their old trick of having a "talk", and as their good faith could only be known by trying

1841 them, rations were issued to them, and military operations ceased. When they had

Apr. gained their object, namely, time to plant crops, they all to a man disappeared in April.

Mch. In March the Tallahassee chief, Echo-E-Mathler, was taken with sixty of his band, and sent west.

The policy of the government in offering peace at one time and war at another, merely resulted in causing the Indians to prolong the contest. Such, too,

Q. Who succeeded General Taylor? How did matters go on? What delegation came from the West? Tell of the murder of Mrs. Montgomery. Where did the Indians begin to reappear? Tell of the killing of Waxehadjo. Give an account of the incursion of Colonel Harney. What effect did it have?

was the effect of changing plans, officers, and troops. Now was the fifth year of the war, and the Seminoles still remained in Florida.

CAPTURE OF COACOOCHEE OR "WILD CAT." In February, while operating along the Kissimee, Colonel W. J. Worth—the *gallant* Worth—had "Wild Feb. Cat" brought in to him arrayed in a gorgeous attire which he had taken from a band



NORTH-CO

Giddings' Exiles.

COACOOCHEE.

of strolling actors within six miles of St. Augustine. He agreed to bring his band to the camp, but in ten days returned to report that he could not collect them, because they were scattered. Meeting General Armstrong, he made a similar promise; but in April and May he frequently came in, and reported that he could do nothing, owing to the movements of the troops. And at the same time he was making heavy demands for whiskey and rations. This satisfied Major Childs that he was

Q. What object did the Indians have in coming in? What was the policy of the government? How long had the war already lasted? Who was brought in to Colonel Worth? What did "Wild Cat" agree to do? Give his behavior. What order did Major Childs issue? What was done with Coacoochee when he came in?

merely practising deception, and accordingly, the major issued an order for his arrest the first time he should come in. Coacoochee appeared on June the 15th of June, when he was seized, and with his uncle, brother, and sixteen followers, was hurried away to Arkansas.

GENERAL WORTH SUCCEEDS GENERAL ARMISTEAD. As the result of the year's work, General Armistead could only show the capture of four hundred and fifty Indians, of whom one hundred and twenty were warriors. In May he asked to be relieved. The government assigned the command to General (lately *Colonel*) W. J. Worth, the eighth officer who had held that office—but a better choice could not have been made.

SUMMER CAMPAIGN. Having all the mistakes of his predecessors before him, and fully recognizing that their failure had been due to the cessation of hostilities on the part of the troops, General Worth determined to prosecute the war during the summer, and organized the troops under his command in the most effective manner. The order was simply, "Find the enemy, capture, or exterminate". Simultaneous movements were made in every district; boats went up the Withlacoochee, and every swamp between the Atlantic and the Gulf was explored. Fields and cribs were destroyed in the hammocks and on the islands of the swamps. Tiger Tail, seated on the top of a tree, watched the destruction of his corn crib, on which he depended for sustenance for the coming year. The troops were engaged for twenty-five days, with the thermometer averaging 86°; but of the six hundred

men employed only one-fourth were compelled to go to the hospital.

At a council of the Seminoles they decided to slay any messenger, white, red, or black, who came to treat of surrender. The simultaneous movements of the numerous companies of soldiers at the season when usually military operations were suspended had a very disheartening effect on the Indians.

RETURN OF COACOOCHEE. As soon as General Worth learned of the capture and transportation of "Wild Cat", he at once despatched a messenger to overtake the party and bring him and his companions back to Tampa Bay. Here July 4 General Worth met the chief, who had become after the death of Osceola the most active and enterprising of the Seminole leaders. On the 4th of July the American commander and his staff boarded the transport, where the young Indian chief and his friends were sitting on deck, heavily ironed. Taking Coacoochee by the hand, General Worth addressed him in words calculated to stir an Indian's vanity. He spoke of Coacoochee's bravery, of the noble fight he had made for his country, of his wise counsel, which his nation was wont to follow; then, of the murders committed and the destruction brought on the harmless settlers; and he declared that Coacoochee was the man to end the war. A time was

Q. Give the result of the year's work. Who was placed in command? How did General Worth determine to carry on the war? Give his order. Give the movements of the troops. What did Tiger Tail watch? How well did the troops endure the summer campaign? What did the Seminoles decide? What effect did the movements of the troops have on them?

given him, as long as he wished, to bring in his band. If they did not come by the day agreed on, Coacoochee and his companions should surely hang from the yard-arm of the ship.

Slowly the chief rose, and in a low tone replied, amid the silence of the company. He related the encroachment of the whites, who offered peace in one hand, while the other held a serpent which stung the Indian; he declared that he only wished a spot of earth in which to lay his wife and child; but the white man was too strong. He was ready to go to Arkansas; but he could not call in his band, chained as he was. If he could go to them a free man, they would surrender.

General Worth told him that he could not go; but he might send three or five of his men to carry his "talk", and that thirty, forty, or fifty days would be granted them. Calling five of his companions, the chief gave them his "talk", reciting all his services and his claims upon his band, giving them forty sticks, representing forty days, the last and fortieth being larger than the rest and having blood upon it. Every member of his band must be in within forty days.

COMING IN OF "WILD CAT'S" BAND. The messengers departed, and with them old Micco, who had been instrumental in persuading "Wild Cat" to come in the first time to General (then *Colonel*) Worth's camp. In ten days Micco returned with six warriors and a number of women and children. Small parties continued to arrive. At first the chief was sad and dejected, but gradually brightened; and when he learned at the end

Q. What did General Worth do when he heard of the capture of "Wild Cat"? What is to be said of this Seminole as a leader? Give an account of the meeting. What did General Worth say "Wild Cat" must do? Give Coacoochee's reply.

of the month that all were in, he was much relieved, and requested that his chains be taken off, that he might meet his men "like a man". This was done. Gaily bedecked in his turban of crimson silk in which waved three ostrich plumes, with his breast covered with glittering silver ornaments, his colored frock fastened by a red silk girdle into which a scalping knife was thrust, his legs encased in red leggins and ornamented moccasins,—arrayed in all this magnificence, Coacoochee was rowed to the beach. Stepping ashore, he gave a shrill war-whoop, which reëchoed in the forests and was repeated by his warriors. He then passed on to headquarters, and saluted General Worth: after this he addressed his people, thanking them for obeying his summons, and declaring that he was done with war. "The rifle is hid," he said, "and the white and red man are friends."

"Wild Cat" was not the great warrior he imagined himself, yet he desired to appear so, and was anxious to increase his influence in the West by inducing as many as possible to go with him.

At his wish, the army ceased operating in some degree, except on the frontier, though scouting parties still patrolled the country.

COACOOCHEE INFLUENCES CERTAIN CHIEFS TO COME IN. A messenger from "Wild Cat" brought in his brother Otulkee and five companions. Otulkee gave Coacoochee a message from Hospetarkee, that

Q. Give General Worth's reply. Tell of the chief's sending for his band. Tell of the coming of the Indians. How did "Wild Cat" behave? Describe his attire when he was rowed to the beach. How did he act on shore? What did he declare to his people?

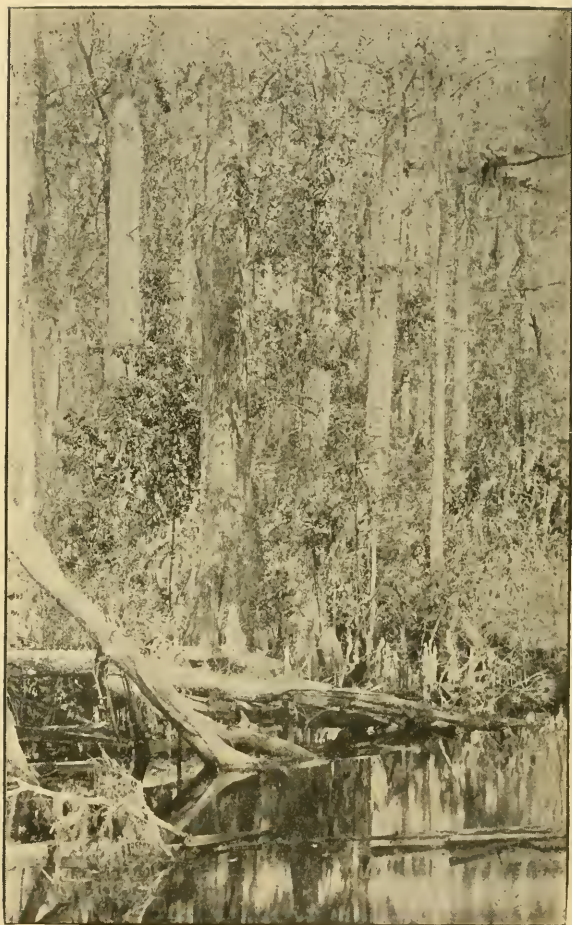
he was coming to see him. "Wild Cat" went out to meet him, and induced him to come in for a "talk", which took place on board a transport, where Hospetarkee, with eighteen of his followers, was held. When "Wild Cat" visited Tiger Tail, the latter insisted on conversing with Alligator, who was then beyond the Mississippi. On his arrival, Alligator had an interview with Tiger Tail and Halleck-Tustenuggee, but accomplished nothing beyond the surrender of a part of their bands in October.

In this month Coacoochee and Hospetarkee asked to be sent to their future homes. Accordingly, they and their warriors, two hundred and eleven in all, sailed for New Orleans, and from there to Arkansas.

SUBSEQUENT HISTORY OF COACOOCHEE. This Chief was always a protector of the negroes among the Seminoles. In 1850 he went from the Indian Territory to Mexico with three hundred negroes whom the Creeks were endeavoring to enslave, and for a time remained with them in that country. Two years later he returned, and, though pursued, escaped with a number of slaves belonging to the Creeks. He was afterwards heard of at the head of a band of Comanches.

INDIANS OF CYPRESS SWAMP. In the Big Cypress Swamp the desperate characters of all the Semi-

Q. Why did "Wild Cat" wish others to go with him? What influence did his wish have on the movements of the troops? Tell of Otulkee and Hospetarkee. On what did Tiger Tail insist? What did Alligator accomplish? Give the number carried west with Coacoochee and Hospetarkee. Give the subsequent history of Coacoochee.



From Mrs. Moore Willson's "Seminoles of Florida".

ONE OF THE LAST BATTLE-FIELDS OF THE THE SEMINOLE WAR.

nole tribes assembled, as well as some Creeks from Georgia. The prophet, a Creek, held complete sway, and woe to the man, white or red, who dared to appear among them.

1841 Aug. Sole-Micco, a Seminole chief, came into a post below Pease Creek in August, hotly pursued by warriors from the prophet's band.

FURTHER MOVEMENTS. A land and naval expedition went through the Everglades, and also through the extremity of the peninsula and the Big Cypress Swamp. Indian fields and huts were destroyed; but the Indians themselves escaped to the coast, although those who fled to the southeast fell into the hands of Major Wade. War became continual. There were now no hiding-places for the Indians and powder and ball began to be too scarce for hunting, which was also dangerous, since the sound of the rifle would betray the hunter. Small bands, however, kept up a state of uneasiness in various parts of the territory. When the men of Mandarin were absent on a hunt, Halleck-Tustenuggee fell on the town, and killed two men, two women, and one child. As Mandarin was within twelve miles of Jacksonville, great consternation prevailed. About this time sixty-seven of the warriors of Billy Bowlegs and Sam Jones were taken. In February of the following year two hundred and thirty Seminoles were

Q. What was the character of the Indians in the Big Cypress Swamp? Who held sway over them? Tell of a land and naval expedition. What was the condition of the Indians? Relate the attack on Mandarin. What warriors were taken? What can you say of Halleck-Tustenuggee?

carried from the country, and one hundred more in April.

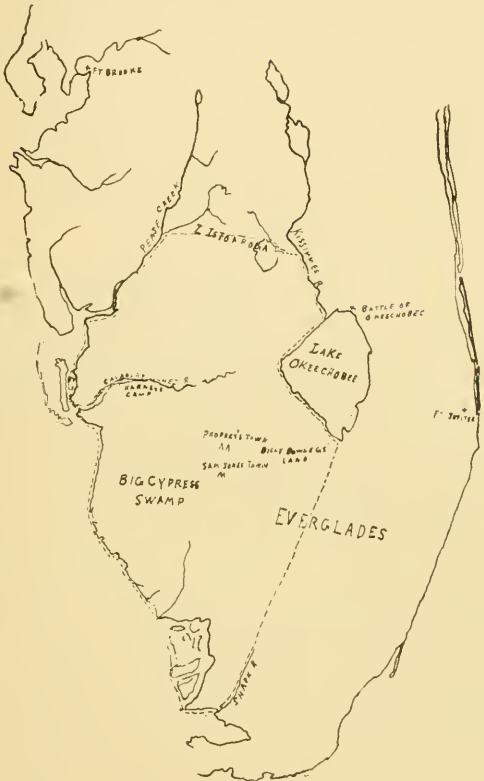
General Worth himself took charge of the pursuit of Halleck-Tustenuggee, the most active and vindictive of all the chiefs. A perfect master of woodcraft, he would often cover his tracks so completely that pursuit was impossible. When General
1842 Worth supposed that he had the chief completely surrounded in the Pilaklikaha Swamp, his band, dividing into small parties, escaped through the lines. He was persuaded to come in for a "talk" by his father-in-law, "King of the Lakes", and a second time at Fort King, where General Worth secured him. His band was seized at a feast, numbering thirty-two warriors and thirty-eight women and children, a number small, but sufficient to keep the country in a state of alarm.

West of the Suwannee dwelt Halpater-Tustenuggee, chief of a band of Creeks and outlaws. In revenge for the destruction of his settlement, he crossed the Suwannee, attacked a settler's family, fired on some troops, and succeeded in joining Octiarche in Wacassassa Hammock.

In February General Worth, calculating that one hundred and twelve warriors and one hundred and eighty-nine women and children remained,
Feb. recommended that these be allowed to reside temporarily below Pease Creek. The re-
May commendation was not at first received with
10 favor, but was finally approved in the President's message, May 10, and orders were issued accordingly.

WAR ANNOUNCED AS ENDED. On the 14th of Au-

gust General Worth issued general order No. 28, announcing that the war was closed. To the



SEMINOLE RESERVATION.

few Indians remaining was assigned a territory
 Aug. 14 extending from the mouth of Pease Creek
 to the fork of its southern branch, thence
 to the head of Lake Istokpoga, thence down
 to the Kissimee, from where the line ran to Lake Okeechobee, striking from here through the Everglades to

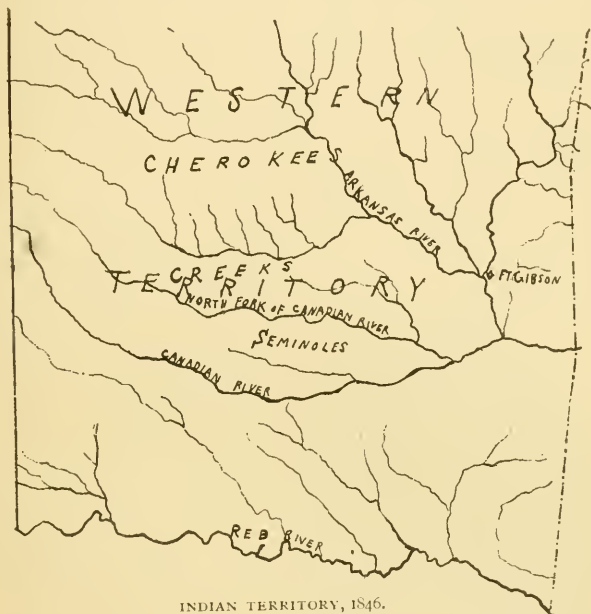
the Shark River, and thence running along the coast to the point of original departure. To protect settlers from attacks of the Indians, block-houses were established in the habitable part of the country.

General Worth now proceeded to Washington, where he was received with great consideration, and was presented by the President with a commission of brigadier-general, conferred for his "gallantry and highly distinguished services".

RENEWED HOSTILITY. While negotiations were going on with the Indians, Colonel Vose received news that a party of ten had attacked San Pedro in Madison county, the most popular section of the country. Much criticism was evoked by this circumstance against the methods taken to bring the war to a close, and orders came from the War Department to muster the militia to punish the Indians. But Colonel Nov. Vose wisely refrained from acting, explaining the true state of affairs. General Worth resumed command in November. Octiarche and Tiger Tail had been for some time carrying on negotiations, always accompanied by demands for rations and whiskey. Finding out that Octiarche would likely be involved in difficulties with Billy Bowlegs over the position of head-chief, General Worth had him secured; and soon after effected the capture of Tiger Tail and

Q. Tell of his escape from General Worth. How was he secured? How was his band captured? Where did Halpater-Tustenuggee operate? What did he do to revenge the destruction of his settlement? Give the number of Indians in Florida at this time. What did General Worth recommend? What order did he issue? Give the territory assigned to the Seminoles.

his warriors. On the Ocklochonee Colonel Hitchcock pursued Pascoffer so closely as to compel him to surrender with his party of thirty women and chil-



dren and twenty-nine warriors. Sam Jones and Billy Bowlegs were the only chiefs now remaining in the country.

END OF THE SEMINOLE WAR. The war was con-

Q. How were the settlers to be protected? How was General Worth treated at Washington? What place was suddenly attacked? What orders did Colonel Vose receive from Washington? What did he do in regard to them? Tell of the capture of Octiarche. Whom did Colonel Hitchcock capture? What chiefs remained in the country? To whom was the credit of ending the war given?

sidered as closed. Though his methods were by some criticised, all agreed in giving General Worth 1842 the credit for solving in a most economical way the question that had puzzled all his predecessors, and for ending the war.

In November, 1843, General Worth calculated that there were in Florida forty-two Seminoles, 1843 thirty-three Miccosukies, ten Creeks, ten Tal-
Nov. lahassees—in all ninety-five warriors, to which two hundred and five was to be added 1845 for women and children. Two years later Captain Sprague estimated the entire number at three hundred and sixty. At this time Sam Jones was ninety-two years old.

From December 28, 1835, to August 14, 1842, represents a period of nearly seven years of the 1835 most disgraceful war the United States ever
Dec. waged with a weaker nation. Her best gen-
28 erals had been employed, and her entire army, numbering at one time under General Jesup 1842 nearly nine thousand men against scarcely
Aug. more than two thousand warriors, at a cost
14 of forty millions of dollars. She lost one thousand four hundred and sixty-six soldiers, two hundred and fifteen of them officers.

Since 1842 the Indians have committed depredations on two separate occasions, but a short campaign of the State troops sufficed each time to drive them back to their territory.

Q. Give some estimates of the number of Seminoles remaining in Florida. How old was Sam Jones in 1845? How long did the war last? What can you say of it? Give the force employed and the cost. How many men did the United States lose? What depredations have the Seminoles committed since 1842?

CHAPTER XX.

TERRITORIAL GOVERNORS—ADMISSION OF FLORIDA INTO THE UNION—RAILROADS—FLORIDA IN 1860.

GOVERNOR R. K. CALL, AND OTHER GOVERNORS.

Wm. P. Duval remained governor of the 1822-34 territory of Florida until 1834, when Presi-

1834-35 Jackson appointed in his place General John B. Eaton, who had been a member of Jack-

son's cabinet, and was famous for his marriage with "Peg" O'Neil. Re-

signing in 1835,

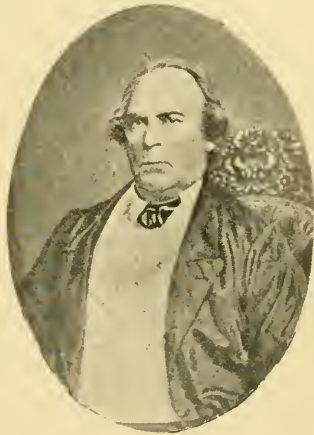
1835-39 General Eaton was succeeded

by another of Jackson's old officers,

1841-44 General Richard Keith Call.

Governor Call was born near Petersburg, Va., in 1791, served as an aide to General Jackson in the wars of the early part of the present century,

and for this reason looked upon himself as one of the founders of the nation. He was a member of the first legislative council of Florida, and its first territorial delegate in Congress. President Jackson appointed him governor of Florida in 1835, an office which he



GOV. R. K. CALL, 1835-40, 1841-44.

held until December, 1839, when he lost it because of a controversy with the Secretary of War in Van Buren's cabinet. For a time Governor Call commanded the troops operating against the Seminoles. After his removal from office he turned Whig and worked to secure the election of Harrison, by whom he was reappointed governor in March, 1841, which he continued to be till August, 1844. He was never forgiven by the people of Florida for turning Whig, and for this reason he failed in 1845 to secure the election to the governorship of the new State. General Call took great interest in the upbuilding of Florida. He himself planned and had constructed the third railroad in the United States, from Tallahassee to Port Leon near St. Marks. At the opening of the Civil War he was one of the few Southern men who did not advocate secession, though he defended the institution of slavery. The second year of the war saw the end of his life, September, 1862.

On the removal of Governor Call in 1839 President Van Buren appointed as his successor Robert 1839-41 Raymond Reed (1839-41). After his second 1844-45 term Governor Call was succeeded in 1844 by John Branch (1844-45), who had been Secretary of War for President Jackson. Governor Branch was in office at the time Florida was admitted as a State into the Union.

ADMISSION OF FLORIDA INTO THE UNION. For a number of years a warm discussion was kept up

Q. Who succeeded Governor Duval? Who became governor on the resignation of Governor Eaton? Why did General Call regard himself as one of the founders of the nation? What offices did he hold? Who appointed him governor the second time?

whether Florida should be admitted into the Union as a single State, or as two, East and West Florida, which would require her to wait until each section should have a sufficient population to enter alone. Once or twice the question of waiting was referred to the people of the territory and it was decided at the polls not to wait.

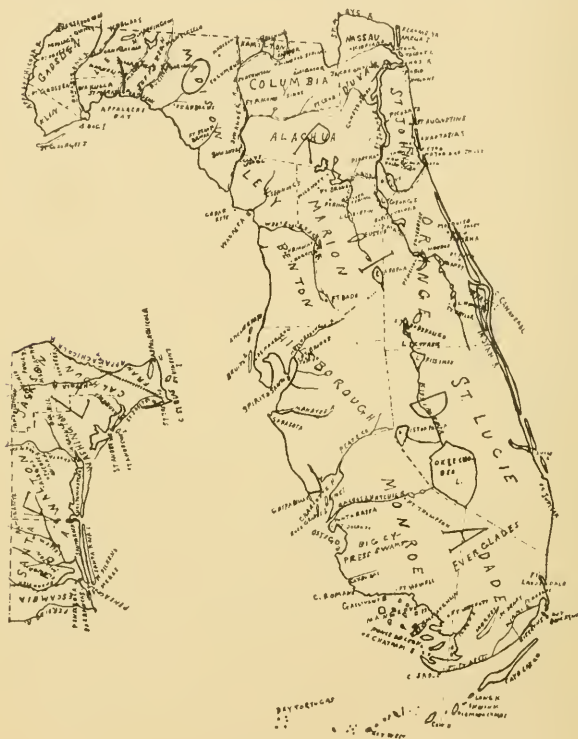
A convention assembled at St. Josephs on the 3rd of December, 1838, to frame a constitution preparatory to asking for admission; but at Dec. 3 this time the population of the territory was not sufficient; and though later a petition was 1845 addressed to Congress, the bill admitting Mch. 3 Florida to the Union was not passed till 1845, receiving the President's signature of approval on the 3rd of March. A motion in the House of Representatives to form two States was lost.

According to the constitution of the new State the Governor was to serve for a term of four years with a salary of one thousand two hundred dollars. In case of his death the president of the Senate was to fill the chair left vacant. Senators were to be elected for two years, representatives for one, and these latter were not to exceed sixty in number. The legislature was to meet annually on the first Monday of November. United States courts were also established, but the old officers of the territorial courts

Q. Why did Governor Call fail to be elected governor of the new State? What railroad did he build? What were his views at the opening of the Civil War? Give his successors. What warm discussion was kept up for a number of years? What convention was held in 1838? When did the bill admitting Florida to the Union receive the President's signature?

were continued in office owing to suits in which the general government was involved.

Florida had at first only one representative in the House of Representatives at Washington. This rep-



FLORIDA IN 1846.

resentation was not changed till the census of 1870, two representatives being sent to Congress for the first time in 1872.

As a supplementary act to the bill of admission, Congress set aside section number sixteen of every

township for school purposes, and two entire townships for two seminaries, one east, the other west of the Suwannee. Five per cent. of all public lands sold within the State by Congress was also set aside for education. At this time the Register of Public Lands acted also as Superintendent of Education.

REPUDIATION. It will be remembered that in the 30's several banks were established whose capital was wholly or in part guaranteed by the territory.

1845 After the failure of the Union Bank the judiciary committee of the legislature decided in 1840 that the territory was not liable for the debt of the bank, on the ground that the governor and the legislature could not pledge the faith and credit of the people. All the governors, except Governor Call, fostered this belief. When it became necessary for the new State to assume this indebtedness, she adopted a scheme of repudiation based on the idea that her new form of government released her from all former obligations with regard to the bank. At the same time the State also repudiated the debt arising from the operations of the Bank of Pensacola and from the Southern Life Insurance and Trust Company. In all three million nine hundred thousand dollars were repudiated.

FIRST STATE ELECTION. On the 5th of April, 1845, Governor Branch issued a writ fixing the 26th of May as the date for the election of a gov-

Q. Give the length of the governor's term of office and his salary. Give the term of office of the senators and representatives, and the number of the latter; the day of meeting of the legislature. How many representatives did Florida have? When were two first elected? What did Congress do for education? Who was Superintendent of Education?

ernor, a legislature and a representative to the national
Congress. The legislature was to be com-
posed of seventeen senators and forty-one
representatives.

May
26

After the votes had been counted, it was found that the Democratic nominee for governor, William D. Moseley, was elected over his opponent R. K. Call, the Whig candidate, and that David Levy, a Democrat, was returned as representative at Washington. The first legislature met at Tallahassee June 23, but adjourned the same day on account of the death of General Jackson. On July 1 two United States senators were elected, David Levy and James D. Wescott, Jr., both Democrats. As Mr. Levy had previously been elected the representative, an election was held in October to fill the vacancy. So close was the vote that it became necessary for Congress to decide the contested seat. Congress gave the seat to
1845 the Democratic candidate, Brockenbrough, though the Whig, Cabell, seems to have had a slight majority. However, Mr. Cabell became representative at the election held the following year, and continued to hold the office for several sessions of Congress.

WILLIAM D. MOSELEY, GOVERNOR: 1845-1849.
During 1846 Congress offered for sale over a million acres of public land, on Tampa Bay, on the Withlacoo-

Q. On what ground was it decided that the territory was not liable for the debt of the Union Bank? What scheme of repudiation was adopted when Florida became a State? How much was repudiated in all? What election was held on May 26? Give the size of the legislature. Who was the first governor of the new State? Who was the first representative? Who were the first senators?

chee River, and on the Atlantic Ocean south of Mosquito Inlet. The year was also marked by a severe storm which left scarcely a house in Key West with a roof. At Key West the wreckers during 1846 this year recovered over one million six hundred thousand dollars of property from the ships wrecked on the Florida reefs. This volume of business done by the wreckers was due to the use of charts made during the rule of Spain and of Great Britain, and showed the need of a better survey of the coast, or of a canal across the peninsula.

At the October election the Whigs succeeded in obtaining a majority in the legislature on joint ballot and were thus enabled to send a Whig senator 1847 to Washington.

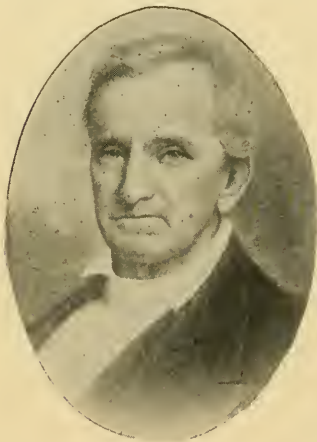
An amendment to the constitution was adopted at this time to the effect that the legislature should hereafter meet biennially instead of annually.



GOV. WILLIAM D. MOSELEY, 1845-1849.

THOMAS BROWN, GOVERNOR: 1849-1853. In October, 1848, Thomas Brown, a Whig, was elected to the governorship. A question arose concerning 1848 the time from which Governor Moseley's term should be dated, from October, 1844, or 1845, or from May, 1845, the date of the first

election. At Governor Brown's request that the
1848 question be settled as soon as possible, the
legislature decided that Governor Moseley's
term of office should expire in October, 1849. The
"Wilmot Proviso" came up at this session of the legis-
lature, and this body decided that Florida should stand
by the other Southern states in demanding that slavery
be allowed south of the Missouri line. Laws were en-
acted at this time for establishing the public schools
provided for in the constitution. Governor Brown's
message to the legislature complains that Florida was
making very slow progress.



GOV. THOMAS BROWN, 1849-53.

At the meeting
of the legislature in
1850-51 a Supreme
Court was es-
1850-51 tablished, con-
sisting of a
chief-justice and asso-
ciate judges who were
to hold four annual ses-
sions. The election of
these judges and of the
judges of the circuit
court was referred to
the people. Senator
Yulee* was succeeded
at this time by Stephen

Q. Tell of Mr. Levy's successor as representative. Men-
tion some of the things by which the year 1846 was marked.
Why were so many ships wrecked on the Florida reefs?
What party secured the upper hand in the legislature? What
amendment to the constitution was adopted? Who was the
second governor? What question arose at this time?

* The name assumed by Senator Levy. Yulee is an anagram on Levy.

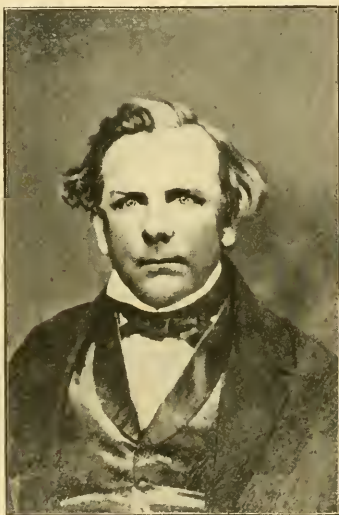
R. Mallory, who afterwards became the Confederate Secretary of Navy.

JAMES E. BROOME, GOVERNOR: 1853-1857.

1853 In 1853 Governor Brown was followed in the governorship by the third governor, James E. Broome, of Tallahassee.

1854 A question having arisen as to the advisability of retaining the capital of the State at Tallahassee, the matter was referred to a vote of the people, by whom it was decided that no change should be made.

In 1848 the Indians in the southern end of the peninsula became troublesome, but a short campaign of the State troops drove them back into their bounds. A more serious outbreak occurred in 1855, which lasted for some time, and which cost the State two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars to quell.

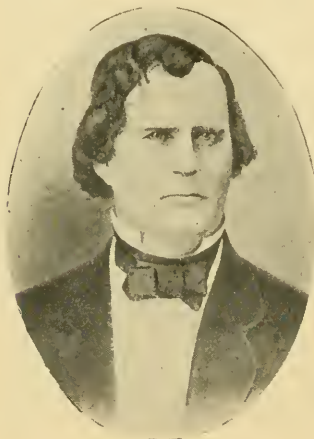


GOV. JAMES E. BROOME, 1853-57.

The twelfth article

Q. How was it decided? What did the legislature decide concerning the "Wilmot Proviso"? What did Governor Brown think of the State's progress? What court was established by the legislature of 1850-51? Name Senator Yulee's successor. Name the third governor. What question was decided in 1854? What Indian troubles occurred?

of the constitution of Florida required that all public improvements should be encouraged. Accordingly, in this year an act of the legislature authorized the issue of bonds to aid railroads to the amount of ten thousand—later increased to sixteen thousand—dollars per mile. The State was to have a first mortgage lien on the property of the roads, and the governor was to seize and sell them for the State in case of failure to pay interest or principal. Under this act four million dollars of bonds were afterwards issued for the Florida Central and Jacksonville, Pensacola, and Mobile Railways, the bonds of these roads being taken in exchange.



GOV. MARION S. PERRY, 1857-61.

MARION STARKE PERRY, GOVERNOR: 1857-1861. In 1857 Marion Starke Perry, of 1857 Alachua county, succeeded Governor Broome. During this administration several railroads were begun, though till 1861 the only completed road was the short one from Tallahassee to St. Marks. In 1861 the line of railway running from Fernandina to

Cedar Keys was brought to completion. During 1859 and 1860 three other roads were graded and laid with irons for a part of their distance.

Florida took a prominent part in the events of 1860 which preceded the outbreak of the war in 1861 be-

tween the North and the South. At the Democratic convention held in Charleston in 1860 her delegates were among the first to follow Alabama's lead in withdrawing, an act which was one of the great forerunners of the secession of the Southern States. Governor Perry was in full sympathy with the advocates of secession, and when the legislature met in November, 1860, he recommended that Florida should withdraw immediately from the Union.

FLORIDA IN 1860. The census of 1830 gave Florida a population of 34,730, which number had by 1860 become 140,439. The value of the real and 1860 personal property of the State was over eighty millions of dollars, a large part of it being in slaves. Farming and cattle raising formed the chief industries. Florida was not yet regarded as a vast garden for tropical fruits. Several railroads were in the process of construction, and others had been projected.

Since 1849 public education had been fostered, though not as much was accomplished as might have been. There were in 1860 ninety-seven public schools, which were attended by a little over two thousand pupils; but the children who received instruction were mainly educated in private institutions, of which there were at this time one hundred and thirty-eight academies and other schools, with over four thousand schol-

Q. What did the twelfth article of the constitution require? What act was passed by the legislature? Give the amount of bonds issued under this act. Who succeeded Governor Brown? What can you say of railroads during his administration? What part did Florida take in the events preceding the Civil War? How was Governor Perry disposed towards secession?

ars. The school fund yielded in 1860 a little over twenty-two thousand dollars. In 1853 the East Florida Seminary opened its doors at Ocala,* and four years later the West Florida Seminary began work at Tallahassee.

JOHN MILTON, GOVERNOR: 1861-1865. John Milton, of Jackson county, was elected governor at the election of 1860. Governor Milton entered on the duties of his office in 1861 and continued to perform them during the trying years of the war till his death, April 1, 1865.

Q. State some things showing the condition of Florida in 1860. What was the state of public instruction at this time? of private instruction? What two seminaries had been established? Who was elected governor in 1860?

* Moved to Gainesville in 1866.



GOV. JOHN MILTON, 1861-65.

CHAPTER XXI.

CIVIL WAR: SECESSION—SEIZURE OF FORTS AND ARSENALS—FORT PICKENS—OPERATIONS OF 1861—COAST HELD BY NORTHERN FORCES.

WITHDRAWAL OF FLORIDA FROM THE UNION.

When the legislature of Florida assembled 1860 at Tallahassee on the 26th of November, Nov. 1860, Governor M. S. Perry recommended 26 to it that a convention be called in order that the State might immediately sever her con- Dec. 1 nection with the other States. Accordingly, a call was issued December 1, for a con- 1861 vention of delegates to meet at Tallahassee Jan. 3 on the third day of the following January.

At the appointed time the delegates assembled, and after an opening prayer from Bishop Rutledge, elected Colonel Petit chairman of their body. An address was made by Mr. Spratt, a gentleman from South Carolina, which had already passed an ordinance of secession, urging Florida to follow the example of his native State. A set of resolutions adopted by the senators of the Seven Cotton States that in their opinion their States ought to withdraw from the Union, was forwarded to the convention from Wash-

Q. What recommendation did Governor Perry make? When and where did the convention meet? Who offered the opening prayer? Who presided over the convention as chairman? Tell of Mr. Spratt. What resolutions were forwarded by Senator Mallory? What was Florida declared? On what date?

ington by Senator Mallory. Not long after their arrival Florida was on the 10th of January declared through her delegates in convention assembled an independent and sovereign nation. The ordinance was passed by a vote of sixty-two to seven, many of the delegates voting for it, though they had been instructed to vote against secession. Alabama withdrew from the Union on the same day. Previous to this South Carolina and Mississippi had passed an ordinance of secession. That Florida should presume to declare herself an independent nation, a territory purchased from Spain, costing over forty millions of dollars for the Seminole War and for fortifications, with a population in 1860 of only 78,686 whites and 61,753 negro slaves without a voice in the matter, aroused the special indignation of the north.

YULEE, MALLORY, HAWKINS. Although the State had withdrawn from the Union on the 10th Jan. of January, her representatives at Washington did not resign till the 21st, when the first senator to retire publicly from the Senate, Mr. Yulee from Florida, arose and delivered a speech of farewell, justifying his course of action. His colleague, Mr. Mallory, followed, also stating his reasons for withdrawing. In the House of Representatives the first man to bid that body farewell was Mr. Hawkins, the sole Representative from Florida.

David Levy Yulee, originally David Levy, was born in the West Indies in 1811, from where he moved to Florida. When Florida was admitted as a State in 1845, he was her first representative at Washington; but in the same year

gave up his seat to become senator, which office he also filled a second time, as well as 1861 becoming a senator from Florida in the Confederate Congress. After the war Mr. Yulee made a large fortune through the development of railroads. His death occurred in New York in 1886.

Stephen Russell Mallory was born in Trinidad in 1813, whence



1813 he moved to 1873 Key West, where he studied

law and enjoyed a large practice. Mr. Mallory served in the United States Army during the Seminole War, was elected to the National Senate in 1851 and again in 1857, and refused the position of minister to Spain offered him by President Buchanan.

Scharf, C. S. Navy.

HON. STEPHEN R. MALLORY,
SEC. OF NAVY, C. S. A.

While in the Senate, Mr. Mallory served for a long period as chairman of the Senate Naval Committee; and as long as the Confederacy lasted served as its Secretary of Navy. After his release from Fort Lafayette, where he was imprisoned at the end of the war, he returned to Pensacola, to which he had moved from Key West in 1858. He died at Pensacola in 1873.

Q. Give the voting on the ordinance. What States had already seceded? Give some reasons why special wrath was aroused by the action of Florida. Who was the first senator at Washington to bid the senate farewell? Who was the other senator from Florida? Who was the representative? What was Mr. Yulee's original name? Give an account of his life.

Of Florida's sole representative at Washington in 1860, George S. Hawkins, not much can be said, except that he was a man of wonderful constitution, as is shown by his marriages, six in number. Mr. Hawkins served with distinction through the Seminole War.

FLORIDA IN THE CONFEDERACY. Delegates had been appointed on the 18th of January to meet, in Montgomery, Ala., the delegates of six other States for the purpose of forming with them a new government. The convention met on the fourth day of the following month. By the 17th of February Florida had become one of the Confederate States of America.

SEIZURE OF FORTS AND ARSENALS. Four days before the ordinance of secession was passed, 1861 the Quincy Guards took possession of the United States arsenal at Apalachicola with 500,000 musket cartridges, 300,000 rifle cartridges, and 50,000 pounds of powder. One day later the State troops at St. Augustine marched from the Plaza to Fort Marion, which surrendered without resistance. In the western corner of the State, where the United States had been spending large sums on fortifications at the mouth of Pensacola Bay, the State troops secured possession by the 12th of January of the navy yard seven miles down the western side of the bay from Pensa-

Q. Where was Mr. Mallory born? Tell something of his life. What position did he occupy in the Confederacy? Give what is said of Mr. Hawkins. Why were delegates appointed for a convention at Montgomery, Ala.? When were the Confederate States formed?

cola; of Fort Barrancas below the navy yard, a place well able to resist an attack from the water side, and of Fort McRae, still further down the bay, a weak position except as a water battery. But Fort Pickens, on the western end of a long, narrow strip of sand lying before the mouth of the harbor, known as Santa Rosa Island, was held by a small garrison of United States troops. Fort Pickens and Fort McRae com-



PLAZA, ST. AUGUSTINE.

Cca, St. Augustine.

manded the entrance to Pensacola Bay. The former was a strong position, but not yet complete, although it had been building since 1838; in consequence of

Q. Who seized the arsenal at Apalachicola? What ammunition was secured? What place surrendered on the 7th? Give the fortifications on Pensacola Bay. When did the State troops take possession of those on the mainland? What forts commanded the entrance to Pensacola Bay? In what condition was Fort Pickens?

which it was necessary to complete the fortifications by means of sand bags, especially on the side of the harbor, whence an attack would now come; moreover, only about one-fourth of the complement of two hundred and ten guns were furnished with carriages.

An attempt was made on the night of the 8th to take Barrancas by surprise, but the guards were
Jan. 8 alert and the drawbridge up; and so the at-
1861 tacking party of about twenty men beat a hasty retreat. In charge of the garrison of



Burgert, Key West.
FORT TAYLOR, KEY WEST.

forty-six men at this fort was Lieutenant Adam J. Slemmer, who after consultation with the commander at the navy yard carried over his small force, augmented by thirty ordinary seamen from the yard, to
Fort Pickens, where he would be less liable

Jan. 10 to a surprise by land, and could command the harbor. On the morning of the day of his removal, January 10, Lieutenant Slemmer destroyed all the powder at Fort Barrancas that could

not be carried away, and also spiked the guns bearing on the harbor. He refused to surrender Fort Pickens at the demand of the officer in command of the Florida and Alabama troops collected at Pensacola, Colonel Chase, on the 12th, and again on the 15th and 18th.

At the navy yard Commander James Armstrong surrendered on January 12th to Colonel Lo-
Jan. 12 max, who secured in addition to the yard ordnance stores to the amount of \$156,000.



Bugert, Key West.

VIEW AT FORT JEFFERSON, DRY TORTUGAS.

The United States flag was lowered by order of Lieutenant Renshaw, and its place taken by a flag containing thirteen alternate stripes of red and white and a blue field with a single white star.

Q. When was an attempt made to surprise Barrancas? Why did it fail? Give Lieutenant Slemmer's reasons for retiring to Fort Pickens. How many men had he? What did he do? Who commanded the State troops at Pensacola? How often was Lieutenant Slemmer called on to surrender? Give the surrender of the Navy Yard. Describe the new flag. What important ports did United States troops occupy?

At Key West Captain Brannan garrisoned Fort Taylor for the United States on the 14th, and Jan. 14 four days later Major Arnold of the United States forces occupied Fort Jefferson in the Tortugas, both places important as commanding the Gulf of Mexico.

FLORIDA'S PART IN THE WAR. The fate of Florida depended on that of the other Southern States, so that all the United States need do was to get possession of her coast, in order to prevent the importation of arms and ammunition, which could be easily brought in through numerous bays and inlets well adapted for blockade-running. Although there were no great campaigns in the State, Florida freely gave her soldiers, about ten thousand, for the Confederate cause, and nobly and bravely did they uphold her honor. But Florida's greatest work was in supplying provisions, especially beef obtained from the vast herds of Middle and South Florida, the latter furnishing in 1864 as many as two thousand head of cattle every week. The salt with which this beef was salted was made at the numerous works erected on the coast, particularly on the Gulf side. If there was only one battle of much consequence within the borders of the State, yet the many plundering expeditions of Northern soldiers kept the few Confederates busy during the last years of the war; but for the present the eyes of the whole country were on Pensacola Bay.

FORT PICKENS. The possession of Fort Pickens meant the control of Pensacola Bay, which it commanded; and Pensacola Bay formed an excellent basis for the control of the Gulf of Mexico, a desirable thing for both the North and the South. Now would have

been the time for the Confederates to capture Fort Pickens, while it was almost without a garrison, and their troops in considerable numbers were

1861 gathering at Pensacola from Alabama and Florida; but Colonel Chase thought it best to prepare for a siege and provide scaling ladders and six months' provisions. On

Jan. 29 the 29th of January Mr. Mallory effected an arrangement by which no reinforcements were to be thrown into Fort Pickens, unless it should be attacked; and, on the other hand, the Confederates were not to attack, unless first assailed. Because of this agreement Major Israel Vogdes was not allowed on the sixth of February to land the troops he had brought on the

Mar. 11 *Brooklyn*, although he sent provisions to the fort; nor was the ship permitted even to enter the harbor. On the eleventh day of March Brigadier-General Braxton Bragg assumed command of the Confederate forces at Pensacola. Before he could have guns and ammunition brought easily to this place, the branch railroad running north had to be completed. The work of erecting batteries and strengthening forts never ceased, and soon from the water-battery at Fort McRae to the navy yard there were four and a half miles of fortifications. Nineteen distinct batteries were planted, all well masked from an enemy on the gulf or bay.

Q. What had the United States to do in the case of Florida? Why? How many soldiers did Florida furnish for the war? What was her great work? Where was the beef obtained? the salt? What was the nature of the fighting in Florida? Why were all eyes on Pensacola Bay? Why was now the time to capture Fort Pickens?

REINFORCEMENT OF FORT PICKENS. Orders from General Scott to reinforce Fort Pickens with Major Vogdes's troops having been disregarded by Lieutenant Slemmer and by Captain Adams of the *Sabine*, Lieutenant Worden was despatched from Washington with an order for Captain Adams to land the men at once. Lieutenant Worden, having committed the message to memory, stated on his arrival at Pensacola, April 11, that he had a verbal message for Captain Adams, whom he was permitted Apr. 11 to visit the next day. He returned on the evening of the same, and immediately left for the North, without the Confederates suspecting any-



FORT PICKENS.

thing wrong until the morning of the 13th, when it was discovered that Fort Pickens had been reinforced during the night. Lieutenant Worden did not, however, escape, for the Confederate authorities recogniz-

Q. What did Colonel Chase think best? What arrangement did Mr. Mallory effect? Give an instance in which it was kept. Who assumed command of the Confederates at Pensacola? What difficulty did he have first to overcome? Give the extent of the Confederate fortifications. Who was despatched with an order for the reinforcement of Fort Pickens? Why?

ing, though too late, that he had caused the troops to be landed, had him arrested at Montgomery and imprisoned for six months. Three days later, Apr. 15 April 15, one thousand more men were added to the garrison of Fort Pickens, and it was Apr. 17 made the headquarters of the Union forces in Florida, Colonel Harvey Brown commanding. May 2 On the 17th the *Powhatan* arrived with orders to force an entrance into the harbor; but she did not do so, as the fort was unprepared to stand a bombardment. A heavy supply of arms and ammunition was landed on the second day of May.

UNION BATTERIES ON SANTA ROSA ISLAND. To prevent an attack from the Confederates by way of the island, two batteries were erected at the distance of about four hundred yards from Fort Pickens, one on the harbor side, the other on the gulf side. About three fourths of a mile further Colonel "Billy" Wilson was encamped with a company of Zouaves, known as "Uncle Sam's Pet Lambs" and recruited from the toughest population of New York.

BLOCKADE. On the sixth of May a strict blockade was established at Pensacola, and the next day two vessels laden with provisions were not permitted to enter the harbor. Union vessels May 6 closed other ports of Florida at various times 1861 during the year. Key West was blockaded

Q. Tell about Lieutenant Worden's arrival and visit to Captain Adams. What was discovered by the Confederate authorities on the 13th? What was done with Lieutenant Worden? Mention the other reinforcements and supplies thrown into Fort Pickens. What did Pickens become? Tell about the *Powhatan*. Describe the Union batteries and camp on Santa Rosa Island.

on June 8, but since the city could obtain provisions only by sea the inhabitants were in danger June 8 of starvation, and the blockade had to be raised. Matters were, however, simplified by the expulsion in September of all Southern sympathizers.

DANA, FOREST KING, ALVARADO. The United States coast survey steamer *Dana* was seized at Pensacola on the 15th of January. In June the Confederate vessel *Forest King* was held in Key West as a



KEY WEST.

prize after being told by the officers of the *Sabine*, the *South Carolina*, and the *Huntsville* that she might enter. Off Fernandina the United States warship *Vincennes* ran aground and burned the *Alvarado*, which had been the prize of the Confederate privateer *Jeff Davis*. Numerous other captures made by one side or the other could be related, but their very number forbids doing so.

PENSACOLA, NAVAL DOCK, THE JUDAH. By the latter part of April General Bragg collected about seven thousand men in and around Pensacola. As one part of their defense the Confederates towed an im-

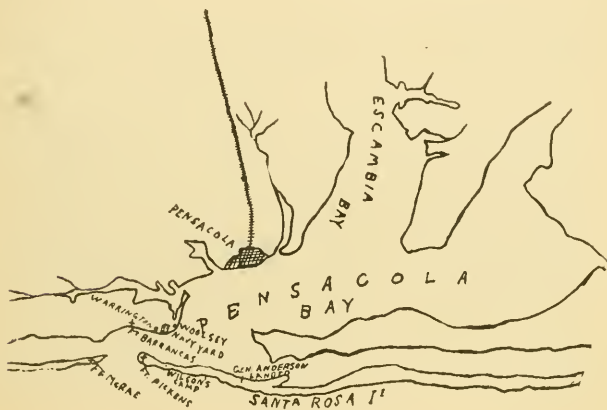
mense naval dock, which had cost a million and a half dollars, out into the channel, where it had been partly sunk to prevent the passage of ships; but later they had raised it preparatory to moving it to a point in front of Fort McRae, where the channel was narrower. In the meantime, however, before 1861
Sept. 2 the Confederates completed the removal, on the night of September 2, Lieutenant Shipley and eleven men rowed silently from Fort Pickens, stowed combustible material in various parts of the structure, and then set fire to it, which spread so rapidly that they barely escaped destruction from the explosion of the three Columbiad shells placed in the boilers. The next day only a few charred timbers floated at the moorings of the once magnificent dock.

A few days later, on the night of the 13th, about one hundred marines came in a cutter and
Sept. 13 two launches from the United States flagship *Colorado* to the navy yard, in order to destroy the *Judah*, which was lying at the wharf and supposed to fitting out for a privateer. They met a desperate resistance from the guard on board the vessel, but finally succeeded in firing her and making good their own escape.

GENERAL BRAGG MOVES. In order to get even with the enemy General Bragg planned a night attack on
Oct. "Billy" Wilson's camp on Santa Rosa Island.
8 and 9 Five or six launches and two steamers were filled with about one thousand soldiers

Q. Tell about the blockade at Pensacola: at Key West. What three vessels are mentioned as captured or destroyed? What more can you say of the *Forest King* and the *Alvarado*? How many soldiers did General Bragg have in April? Tell what the Confederates had done with the naval dock.

under General R. H. Anderson, and started for the island at 10 P. M., October 8, but owing to various delays did not reach there until 2 o'clock the next morning, when the troops were formed into two companies which were to march silently along the two shores and surprise the Federal camp. Although the report of a sentinel's gun and of the shot by which he was killed had given the alarm, a part of one com-

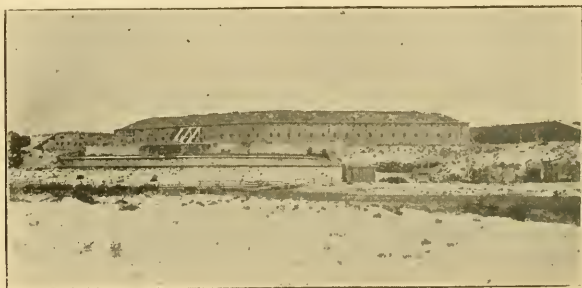


PENSACOLA BAY IN 1861.

pany got into Wilson's camp unobserved; and soon the flames of the burning tents indicated that the object of the expedition had been effected. But the noise of the firing which had now become general aroused the garrison of Fort Pickens to the aid of their friends, who were thus en-

Q. Tell of the destruction of the dock by Lieutenant Shipley. What Confederate vessel was destroyed on September 13? Give an account of this destruction. What expedition did General Bragg plan? Why? Give the size of the expedition to Santa Rosa Island. Tell its movements up to the capture of Wilson's camp.

abled to rally and in the gray dawn of the morning compel the Confederates to retreat to their boats. The deep sand and fatigue of the soldiers were greatly against the retiring invaders, as was also an accident to one of the steamers, which exposed the mass of men on her deck to a continuous fire from shore. General Anderson reported, however, that only eighteen were killed, thirty-nine wounded, thirty missing, most of whom were the guard stationed over the camp hospital, and who had not retired promptly. The other side reported fourteen killed, twenty-nine wounded,



FORT BARRANCAS.

twenty-four missing. It should be observed that night attacks are always dangerous, the troops being liable to disorder and consequent failure; and that in this particular case no advantage was to be gained by burning Wilson's camp.

BATTLE OF THE FORTS. After this little episode the Union and Confederate soldiers again simply watched each other and waited, until watching and waiting became too wearisome for endurance; and so
Nov. 22 Colonel Brown gave orders that at the firing of the signal-gun near the flag-staff on the 22nd of November the cannon of Fort Pick-

ens should open on the fortifications of their antagonists. The ships *Richmond* and *Niagara* moved up so as to employ their guns. On the morning of the 22nd firing began, the Confederates answered, and all day long the heavy guns and mortars pounded away at each other, but doing little damage except at Fort McRae, which had suffered severely, especially from the guns of the warships, so se-



RUINS OF FORT MCRAE.

verely that it became almost incapable of defense. The *Richmond* retired early in the action, the *Niagara* at dusk, but only the *Niagara* returned to the fight the next day; and she did almost nothing, since Nov. the lowness of the tide prevented her from 23 coming within good range. The cannonade of the 23rd was not as rapid as that of the preceding day, and neither side suffered any injury be-

Q. Whence did assistance come to the Federals? What obstacles were against a safe retreat for the Confederates? Give the loss on both sides. Why are night attacks dangerous? What advantage did General Bragg gain? What did both sides now do? What order did Colonel Brown give? What ships took part in the fight? Give the date of the battle.

fore late in the evening, when the Federals began to fire hot-shot, which soon had the villages of Warrington and Woolsey in flames, and set the navy yard on fire three times. At 4 o'clock the next morning General Bragg gave orders to silence his own guns, finding that the enemy no longer replied.



VIEW OF PENSACOLA NAVY YARD.

Silence reigned once more over Pensacola Bay until the first day of January, 1862, when the roar of another bombardment ushered in the new year. The firing continued to a late hour of the night; but, as in the first battle, no damage was done beyond the burning of a few houses at the navy yard and at Woolsey.

Q. Give an account of the firing and the damage done. How did the warships fare? Tell about the firing of November 23. How long did it continue? When was the second bombardment? With what effect? What did the Confederate authorities decide at the beginning of 1862? What effect did this have on Florida?

FERNANDINA OCCUPIED BY UNION TROOPS. At the beginning of 1862 the Confederate authorities decided to concentrate their forces, and, accordingly, the troops in Florida were all, except a mere handful, sent to the fields of Tennessee, thereby leaving the fortifications along the coast to fall into the hands of the enemy.

1862 The first place to be occupied by Northern soldiers was Fernandina and the defenses on Amelia Island, which were taken possession of by an expedition under Commodore Dupont, who Feb. sailed from Hilton Head, S. C., on February 28 28. On information that the Confederates were evacuating Fernandina, Commodore Dupont despatched Commander Drayton with the *Patience* and several light gunboats on ahead through the sound, to prevent destruction of property. The commander did not arrive as soon as expected, for he found Fort Clinch empty, and on coming in sight of Fernandina saw a train of cars loaded with soldiers and military stores endeavoring to escape over the bridge to the mainland. A gunboat gave chase, firing her bow gun from time to time, but the cars had a slight advantage in speed and succeeded in escaping. However, a steamer loaded with women and children was captured, and it is interesting that the captain of this Confederate steamer came originally from Vermont, while Commander Drayton was a native of South Carolina. Commodore Dupont was much surprised at the strength of the fortifications on Amelia Island. If

they could have been properly defended, they would have withstood a very heavy attack.

ST. AUGUSTINE. The female portion of the population gave more trouble at St. Augustine than the male, as the soldiers evacuated the town, but
Mar. the women assembled on the Plaza on the
11 night of the tenth of March and cut down the
flagstaff, so that when Commodore Rodgers received the surrender of St. Augustine the next day, he had to erect a new staff.

JACKSONVILLE. At midday, March 13, four gunboats anchored before Jacksonville, but not
1862 in time to save the mills, lumber, and other
Mar. property, which the Confederates destroyed
13 as they were leaving. A gunboat fitting out for a privateer was also burned. The Union forces found here a number of families of Northern sympathies, who had moved to this part of
Mar. Florida before the war broke out, and who
20 were now emboldened to hold a meeting on the 20th of March, at which a set of resolutions was draughted declaring that no State had a constitutional right to separate itself from the
Mar. Union, and that the ordinance of secession
24 was void. On the 24th a convention was called to meet at Jacksonville, but it never

Q. What place was first occupied by Northern troops? Tell about the expedition. What did Commander Drayton find? What chase is mentioned? Which won? What is interesting about Commander Drayton and the captain of the captured steamer? What can you say of the fortifications on Amelia Island? What did the women of St. Augustine do?

assembled, for an order came that Jacksonville must be evacuated. The Union line, it was said, was becoming too extended. There was a rumor about this time that the Confederates intended to make an attack in full force on the Federals in Jacksonville; and, indeed, Union pickets and stragglers from the main force were being constantly killed or captured. So the departure of the Federals had somewhat the appearance of retreat. On the 9th of April, part of the Union troops went to Fernandina, carrying such of the inhabitants as desired; part went to St. Augustine.

MOSQUITO INLET. To break up the blockade-running at Mosquito Inlet, where vessels were accustomed to enter from Nassau, two gunboats were despatched to the Inlet, reaching it on the 22nd of March; and on the next day their commanders went up the inlet on a tour of inspection. On their return they were suddenly attacked by a body of Confederates, both were killed, and a number of their men suffered the same fate or were made prisoners.

THE CONFEDERATES ABANDON PENSACOLA. In February of this year Brigadier-General Samuel Jones,

Q. What did the Confederates burn on leaving Jacksonville? Give an account of the Union sympathizers. What did they declare in their resolutions? Why was no convention held? What gave to the departure of the Federals an appearance of retreat? Where did they go? Where did the blockade-runners at Mosquito Inlet generally come from? Why were two gunboats sent there?

who had superseded General Bragg at Pensacola, received orders to evacuate that place at the earliest possible moment, moving the guns, the ammunition, and all other movable public property, to points where they were needed, a slow work, for the railroad was in bad condition, and absolute secrecy was necessary to

keep the enemy at Fort Pickens from know-
Mch. ing what was going on. On the Blackwater
11 River, Colonel Beard, aided by the citizens
themselves, burned several mills, lumber, and
other property, valued in all at \$764,500, in order
to prevent their falling into the hands of the Union sol-
diers. Many of the inhabitants from this
May 9 region, as well as from Pensacola, moved into
the interior for greater safety. At last, just
at midnight of the 9th of May, the evacuation was
completed, the torch was applied to the navy yard, the
forts, the steamers, and the public buildings in Pensa-
cola, and soon the whole bay was bright as midday.
The garrison at Fort Pickens began a furious cannon-
ade, but to the serious injury of no one, though it in-
terfered with the final operations of the Confederates,
who succeeded, however, in carrying off everything,
even bits of copper and lead. The *Fulton* on the stocks
at the navy yard was burned, as also a gunboat build-
ing in the Escambia River.

Q. What happened to the exploring party? Who took the place of General Bragg? What orders did he receive? What made the moving difficult? Tell what Colonel Beard did on the Blackwater. Where did many of the inhabitants go? When was the evacuation of Pensacola completed? What did the Confederates then do? How did the garrison of Fort Pickens interfere?

Admiral Porter saw the flames of Pensacola from the *Harriet Lane* far out in the gulf, and 1862 steered for them, reaching the harbor next day in time to be of assistance in conveying troops from Fort Pickens, and to receive the surrender of Major Bobe.

The Union forces were now practically in command of the entire coast-line of Florida.

Q. What vessels did the Confederates burn? Tell about Admiral Porter. What was now the situation in Florida?

CHAPTER XXII.

CIVIL WAR, CONTINUED—ST. JOHNS BLUFF—NEGRO SOLDIERS—CAPTAIN DICKINSON—OLUSTEE—JOHN MILTON—SURRENDER.

1862. PRESIDENT DAVIS made an effort during the course of this year to raise two thousand five hundred more troops in Florida, but did not succeed, 1862 since the men wished to remain at their homes and defend them, if they had to do any fighting. There was, however, little fighting of any consequence. About the middle of June a party of Federal soldiers came to Milton from Pensacola, which formed the first of a long series of raids through the western portion of the State, where in the last years of the war the names of Asboth and of Spurling were known and dreaded in every household.

ST. JOHNS BLUFF. At the high, overhanging bluffs a few miles from the mouth of the St. Johns River the Confederates planted a battery of nine guns in a strong position, accessible only in the rear, through a ravine swept by artillery. Privateers once beyond this bluff were safe from pursuit, which made the Federals anxious to destroy the works upon it; and, accordingly,

Q. Why could not troops be raised by President Davis? What was the importance of this year's fighting? What is to be said of the raid to Milton? What two officers became especially well known through raiding? Tell about St. Johns Bluff. What success did the Federals have at first?

their gunboats attacked the Confederate gar-
rison twice during the month of September,
1862
Oct. 1 the month in which the bluff had been occu-
pied; but were each time compelled to re-
treat. However, on the first day of October, General
Mitchell arrived at the mouth of the St.
Oct. 2 Johns, where he was joined by six gunboats,
three of which steamed up towards St. Johns
Bluff. After exchanging a few shots with its garri-
son, they returned. On the 2nd General
Oct. 3 Mitchell landed a large body of soldiers at
the mouth of the river, who had several small
skirmishes during the day. The following morning
they advanced on the Confederate works without meet-
ing any opposition, as the commander, Colonel Hop-
kins, had hurriedly abandoned everything, even leaving
the guns loaded and the ammunition undestroyed, all
of which the Union soldiers carried away, or rendered
useless. A court of inquiry to investigate Colonel
Hopkins' conduct on this occasion acquitted him of
the charge of cowardice. After the Federals had de-
stroyed the works on St. Johns Bluff, part of their force
went up the St. Johns River, found Jacksonville nearly
deserted, and far up near Enterprise Captain Yard, of
the *Darlington*, captured the Confederate steamer *Gov-
ernor Milton*. But the Northern army had not come
to stay, and soon departed from the St. Johns.

HOME GUARDS. In accordance with the recom-

Q. Give an account of General Mitchell's expedition.
How had the Confederates left St. Johns Bluff? What charge
was Colonel Hopkins acquitted of? Tell what the Federals
did further. How long was the Northern army on the St.
Johns? Give an account of the Home Guards.

mendation in Governor Milton's message to the legislature all men and boys not liable to serve in 1863 the Confederate armies were during 1863 armed, organized into companies, and occasionally drilled, but were not to be mustered out for service except in case of invasion.

NEGRO TROOPS AT JACKSONVILLE. The inhabitants of Jacksonville were surprised to see companies of dark-faced soldiers marching up their 1863 streets one day in the early part of March.

The United States had decided to employ colored troops, enlisting them from the slave population of the South, because they were used to the climate and familiar with the country. And so the 1st and 2nd Regiments of South Carolina Colored Volunteers under Colonels T. W. Higginson and James Montgomery were stationed at Jacksonville, which was to be the basis of their operations. General Finegan, at this time in command of the Confederate troops in East and Middle Florida, called on every man to assist in driving out this new invader. While they were gathering, he employed his own small force in keeping up a continual annoyance. Stragglers were cut off; wood-choppers killed; pickets captured; a 32-pounder cannon was mounted on a flat car hauled by a locomotive, by which means Lieutenant Bachman several times threw shot into the Federal camp, and escaped without injury. But it seemed as if the colored troops had come to stay, an opinion strengthened by the arrival of reinforcements. For a third time,

Mch. however, Jacksonville was evacuated, Sunday, March 29. A high wind was blowing, 29 the houses were mostly of wood, a fine combination for a fire, which some wretches—it is said,

against the entreaties of their officers — took advantage of; and soon Jacksonville was a vast sea of flame that left behind it the ashes of stately buildings and the blackened trunks of magnificent oaks.

PENSACOLA EVACUATED. At nearly the same time these events were occurring in Jacksonville, the garrison of the town of Pensacola was drawn off 1863 as unnecessary to Fort Pickens and Fort Barrancas; and here also, as in Jacksonville, a portion of the buildings was given to the flames.

CAPTAIN DICKINSON. The few troops that formed the Confederate force in Florida were from now on engaged in harassing the enemy and in repelling his foraging parties. One name most prominent in the numerous reports of these affairs is that of Captain J. J. Dickinson. Captain Dickinson was wont to appear in the most unexpected quarters, much to the confusion of his foes, and often he captured their entire number, baggage, plunder, and all.

DESTRUCTION OF SALT WORKS. St. Andrews Bay was especially suited for the location of salt works, as it is a broad shallow piece of water with many solitary bayous and inlets, where salt could be made and the enemy never know it. Accordingly, many establishments were erected here for the manufacture of salt owned by the Confederate government and by private individuals. Rightly concluding that these works

Q. What surprised the inhabitants of Jacksonville? Why were these colored troops in that place? What regiments were these? What did General Finegan do? Describe his method of annoyance. Why did it seem as if the troops had come to stay? When was Jacksonville abandoned? How many times had it been occupied? Tell about the fire. What was done at Pensacola?

were left unguarded, Acting Master William P. Browne of the blockading vessels at the mouth of the bay sent a single boat some twenty miles up that body of water, and destroyed Kent's works on Lake Ocala. Afterwards with the light-draft steamer *Edwin Cressy* he broke up the government works on West Bay, at which four hundred bushels of salt were produced daily; and destroyed one hundred and ninety-eight private works, and burned two hundred buildings. The government works were immediately rebuilt, but were in operation only ten days when two companies of Federals coming from opposite directions surprised the guards and again broke the kettles to pieces and burned the buildings. The Federals destroyed on St. Andrew's Bay something like three million dollars of Confederate property.

DESERTERS. During the latter part of 1863 deserters, men who were seeking to escape conscription into the Confederate armies, or had run away from them, began to congregate in large numbers in the swamps and forests of Middle and Western Florida, especially in Taylor county. Desperate and lawless men, in many sections they inflicted more injuries on the defenseless inhabitants than did the Northern soldiers during the entire war.

BATTLE OF OLUSTEE, OR OCEAN POND. About the end of 1863 the authorities at Washington decided

Q. Tell about the exploits of Captain Dickinson. Why was St. Andrew's Bay well suited for the location of salt works? What works were situated there? Give an account of Acting Master Browne's operations. How much did he destroy with the *Edwin Cressy*? Give an account of the second destruction of the government works.

that, in view of the defenseless condition of
1864 the State, then was an excellent time to send
an expedition into Florida, in order to bring
it back into the Union, which would cut off a large
source of Confederate supplies, would furnish the
North with cotton, timber, lumber, and turpentine,
and would give them recruits for their colored regi-
ments. Accordingly, early in February, 1864, twenty
steamers and eight schooners carrying about six thous-
and men, infantry, cavalry, and artillery, under the
Feb. 7 command of General Truman Seymour, ar-
rived at the St. Johns River from Hilton
Head, S. C., and on the seventh landed the
troops at Jacksonville, who at 3 P. M. of the next day
set out along the railroad leading to Tallahassee. The
company in advance surprised Colonel
1864 McCormick at Camp Finegan early on the
morning of the eighth. The Confederates
themselves escaped, although everything in the camp
fell into the hands of the Federal soldiers. Major R.
Harrison checked the latter's advance for several
hours at a plank bridge over Big Creek not far from
Baldwin, a railway station eighteen miles from Jack-
sonville. The Union cavalry rode into Sanderson
fifteen minutes after the last Confederate had ridden
out the opposite side of the town without waiting to

Q. How much Confederate property was destroyed at
St. Andrew's Bay? Tell about the deserters. Why did the
authorities at Washington think it an excellent time to send
an expedition to Florida? What were the objects of the ex-
pedition? Give the size of the expedition under General
Seymour. How soon did the troops begin marching after
they had landed?

give battle, so that it began to appear as if the entire march from Jacksonville to Tallahassee was Feb. 11 to be made without a serious fight. But on the 11th the Confederates were found entrenched within a few miles of Lake City, which compelled the invaders to fall back and wait for the main body of the army.

When the Northern army began its march from Jacksonville, General Finegan had only about five hundred men with which to oppose it, although credited by the enemy with several thousand; but his force soon increased to two thousand, enabling him to advance to Olustee, or Ocean Pond, a small railway station, where he cast up intrenchments, and was found as stated above. However, just before the main force of the Federals arrived, reinforcements came from Charleston under Brigadier-General A. H. Colquitt and Colonel G. Harrison, so that now Feb. 20 the Confederates mustered four thousand six hundred infantry, six hundred cavalry, and twelve guns. On the 20th General Colquitt advanced beyond the intrenchments to skirmish with the approaching enemy. Within an hour the entire army came up to his support, pouring in on the Union soldiers such a well-directed and murderous fire that the Seventh New Hampshire and the Eighth United

Q. Tell about the surprise of Colonel McCormick. Who checked the Federal cavalry near Baldwin? Give an account of their further progress. How large an army did General Finegan have at first? Tell about General Finegan's movements. What reinforcements arrived? On what day did General Colquitt advance? Describe the battle. By what name is this battle known?

States Colored troops broke ranks, and could
1864 not be rallied again during the fight. For
four hours and a half the battle raged, until
General Seymour ordered a retreat, which was executed in much less time than was required for the march from Jacksonville. On the day after the arrival at Jacksonville the majority of the troops sailed for South Carolina. The Confederates, on the other hand, won deserved praise, since with smaller numbers, in an open field, they completely routed the superior force of the enemy. Moreover, ammunition failed at one time, which compelled Colonel Harrison to hold his men for twenty minutes under a merciless fire without being able to answer a shot. Their victory would have been more complete, if the soldiers had not been fatigued and cavalry not lacking; but as it was the Northern army lost 203 killed, 1152 wounded, 506 missing, while the Confederates' loss was 93 killed, 847 wounded, 6 missing. The Confederates also captured several cannon and sixteen hundred stand of small arms. Never again during the remainder of the war did the Federals undertake a similar expedition in Florida.

SMALL ENGAGEMENTS IN DIFFERENT PARTS OF THE STATE. From now on till the end of the war in the spring of 1865 the conflict in Florida was a series of forays on the part of the Federals, of rapid marches

Q. How long did the battle rage? Tell about the retreat. Why did the Confederates win especial praise? What hindered the victory from being more complete? Give the loss on both sides. What capture did the Confederates also make? Did the Federals again undertake a similar expedition? What was the character of the conflict during the remainder of the war? Tell about Major Weeks.

and ambuscades on the part of the Confederates; but only a few of the deeds of either side can be mentioned. About the middle of July Major Weeks of the United States Army raided into the interior from
1864 Cedar Keys, capturing one hundred and fifty bales of cotton and burning two hundred. During the same month General Asboth made a rapid march north from Fort Barrancas towards Pollard, Ala., expecting to meet a party of raiders from Sherman's army; and again in the latter part of September he mounted seven hundred of his men, with whom he rode as far east as Marianna. A third expedition in July was that of General Birney in considerable force westward from Jacksonville along the railroad as far as Baldwin. The Confederates were not idle, especially Captain Dickinson, who among other exploits overtook a band of raiders at Gainesville on
the 17th of August, and after an engagement
Mch. lasting two hours killed twenty-eight of them,
1865 wounded five, and took one hundred and eighty-eight prisoners. In March, 1865, torpedoes were planted by the Confederates in the St. Johns River several miles below Jacksonville, and by means of them three vessels, *Maple Leaf*, *Hunter*, and *Harriet A. Weed* were destroyed.

JACKSONVILLE HOLDS A CONVENTION. 1864 was the year on which an election for the presidency of the United States was to be held. Accordingly,
May on the 24th of May a convention was held in
24 Jacksonville by friends of the Union to chose delegates for the National Convention at Baltimore, for according to these men Florida was still a part of the Union. One of the delegates was Buckingham

Smith, of St. Augustine, whose name should be always remembered by the people of Florida for the labor he has bestowed on the history of their State.

NATURAL BRIDGE. About the beginning of 1865 the Confederates began to make preparations for blockade-running at St. Marks, but General 1865 Newton of the United States Army threw a strong garrison into that place, which defeated the whole project. In the latter part of March, thinking that he could make an easy capture of the capital, General Newton started on the way to Tallahassee, but the scattered Confederates hastily gathered and at Natural Bridge compelled him to retreat with heavy loss before a much inferior force.

FLORIDA LOSES HER GOVERNOR. The mental labor and anxiety of the last years of the war were too heavy a strain for the endurance of Governor Milton, whose death occurred on the first day of April, a month and a half before the Federal troops received the surrender of the State. John Milton was a son of the 1807 Milton for whom Georgia cast her electoral 1865 votes for first President of the United States.

He was born in Jefferson county, Ga., in 1807, was admitted to the bar of his native State, and once ran for Congress on the question of nullification, in which he believed, but was defeated. After a residence in Mobile and New Orleans he made his home

Q. Give an account of General Asboth's operations. Tell of General Birney. Give Captain Dickinson's exploit at Gainesville. What success did the Confederates obtain from their torpedoes in St. Johns River? What convention was held in May at Jacksonville? What delegate is to be remembered?

in Jackson county, Florida, where he engaged in farming, and where his wonderful conversational powers won him many friends. In 1861 he was the Democratic candidate for governor, and in his canvass traveled to all parts of the State, making friends wherever he went. Governor Milton cheerfully cast in his lot with his people, was always approachable and full of sympathy, and it was in laboring to alleviate
1865 the suffering and distress of the closing years of the war that he allowed himself to be over-



Morast, Tampa.

MANSION OF CAPT. MCNEIL, ELLENTON, FLA.

HIDING PLACE OF J. P. BENJAMIN.

taxed beyond his strength. After his death A. K. Allison, President of the State Senate, took the governor's seat, which he held until the 13th of July.

Q. How were the Confederate plans for blockade-running defeated? Tell about General Newton's defeat at Natural Bridge. What caused Governor Milton's death? When? Give an account of his life to his removal to Florida. Where did he settle in Florida? What can you say of his power of conversation? Give an account of him as governor.

END OF THE WAR. From the 22nd to the 30th of April there was a cessation of hostilities in Florida, inasmuch as Johnston and Sherman had agreed
Apr. to a truce. Not long afterwards information
22-30 reached Florida that Johnston had laid down his arms, and, accordingly, under the same
May terms he had made with Sherman, the Con-
17 federate troops in Florida surrendered to
General Israel Vogdes, May 17, and were pa-
May roled. Three days after the surrender Gen-
20 eral McCook issued a proclamation from Tallahassee declaring all the slaves in the State free.

FLIGHT OF CONFEDERATE AUTHORITIES. After the fall of the Confederacy several of the authorities endeavored to make their way to Florida, and from there to foreign lands. Among those who succeeded in so doing were General Breckenridge, Confederate Secretary of War, and Judah P. Benjamin, Confederate Secretary of State. But President Davis never reached Florida for he was taken prisoner in Georgia, before making St. Marks, to which he was going. His trunk, his rifle, and two boxes of private papers were seized near Waldo, Florida, about the middle of June.

Q. Who took Governor Milton's seat? For how long? When was there a cessation of hostilities? Why? Give an account of the surrender of Confederate troops in Florida. What proclamation was issued by General McCook? Give an account of the flight of some Confederate authorities.

CHAPTER XXIII.

FLORIDA AFTER THE CIVIL WAR--RECONSTRUCTION--IMPEACHMENTS OF GOVERNOR REED--PUBLIC SCHOOLS--FINANCE--RETURN OF THE DEMOCRATS TO POWER--ELECTION OF 1876.

BEGINNING ANEW. The war was ended; Florida was impoverished; the State treasury was empty—
even the principal of the school fund had been
1865 expended—a war debt hung over the people;
and these were not able to pay taxes. The new condition of affairs had demoralized labor, and the whole state of society was disturbed.

In a proclamation dated April 29, 1865, President Johnson removed all restrictions of commerce with the State of Florida, and on the 13th of July appointed William Marvin provisional governor. Governor Marvin published an address to the people, setting forth the change in the condition of affairs, and urging law and order and obedience to the constitution of the United States and to Congress. October 10 he appointed as a day for the election of delegates to a convention to be held at Tallahassee on the 25th of the same month. This convention annulled the ordinance of secession,
1865 declared slavery to be abolished, and repudiated the State debt contracted between January 10, 1861, and October 25, 1865.

Q. What was the condition of Florida at the end of the war? Whom did President Johnson appoint provisional governor? What did Governor Marvin urge in his address to the people? What was done by the convention at Tallahassee?

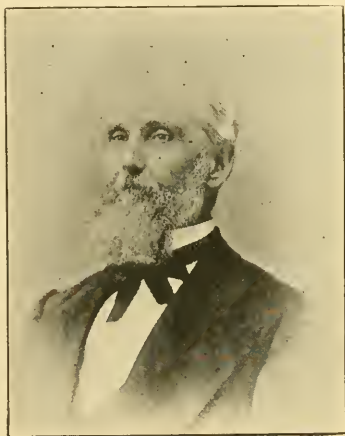
At the election held on the 29th of November David S. Walker was elected governor. Only four thousand votes were cast against fourteen thousand three hundred and forty-seven in 1860. Governor Marvin and Wilkinson Call, a nephew of Governor R. K. Call, were designated United States senators by the legislature, and they at once proceeded to Washington, but as Florida had not yet been readmitted into the Union, they were not permitted to take their seats in the Senate.

DAVID S. WALKER, GOVERNOR: 1866-1868. RE-ADMISSION OF FLORIDA INTO THE UNION.

On the 17th
1866 of January,
1866, Governor Marvin relinquished his power to the governor-elect, David S. Walker.

Little of importance took place during 1866.
1867 Under the

reconstruction measures of Congress General John Pope was placed in April of the following year over the third military district, of which Florida formed a subdivision. General Pope at once set about registering the voters of the State, and, having completed the registration in October, he ordered an election for the middle of November to decide whether a convention



GOV. DAVID S. WALKER, 1866-68.

should be held, and to elect delegates to such a convention. The convention was decided on, 1868 and the delegates elected. These, seventeen of them negroes, met at Tallahassee January 20, 1868. A petition had been sent to General Meade, Pope's successor, by the white voters of the State, charging fraud in the election, inasmuch as the State had been so gerrymandered by General Pope that only radical blacks could be elected. But General Meade had answered that what was done could not be undone.

No sooner had the convention assembled than discord at once arose over the seating of four delegates, and the wrangling continued till on the 1st 1868 of February fifteen members withdrew. The remaining twenty-one or twenty-two, claiming to be a majority, went to work to complete the business of the convention. Within five days they adopted a State constitution. They then adjourned as a convention, and forming themselves into a nominating committee, named a governor, his lieutenant, and other high officers, mostly from their own number.

Immediately after their adjournment, the fifteen members who had withdrawn returned with nine more delegates, and proceeded to the House of Representatives, where they entered a protest against the action of the other delegates. The twenty-four then organ-

Q. Who was elected governor in November, 1865? What was the number of votes cast? Why were the new senators not admitted to the Senate? Who was placed over the district to which Florida belonged? What election was held in November? How many negro delegates were there? What petition was sent to General Meade? Give his answer.

ized a new convention. The disagreement between the two sets of delegates reached such a pitch that General Meade himself came to Tallahassee and placed Colonel Sprague over the convention. By this means harmony was restored, the dispute over the four members was settled, and a constitution was soon agreed on differing little from the one in force before the war except in the "bill of rights" and in the articles concerning the franchise. After this the convention adjourned as such, and formed itself into a nominating committee. Harrison Reed was named for governor, William C. Gleason for lieutenant-governor, and C. M. Hamilton for member of Congress.

Though the negroes made some objection to the constitution on the ground that it gave the whites too much liberty in voting, it was ratified by the 1868 people in May, and the officers mentioned above were elected. The legislature met on the 1st of June, and having accepted the fourteenth amendment to the constitution of the United States, secured the readmission of Florida into the Union, notwithstanding the veto of President Johnson.

On the fourth day of July the State government was transferred from the military to the civil authorities, and the new officers were duly installed in office.

Q. What was the behavior of the convention? What was done by the delegates who remained? After the adjournment of these, what was the action of the other fifteen? Why did General Meade come to Tallahassee? How was harmony restored? In what did the new constitution differ from the old one? What officers were named? Why did the negroes oppose the constitution?

HARRISON REED, GOVERNOR: 1868-1873. IMPEACHMENT. When the legislature assembled in November, only twelve senators were present, and four of these were ineligible under the State's constitution. Governor Reed called attention to this fact, and he also vetoed a bill to pay the expenses of the members of the late convention, inasmuch as they had been already paid. Upon this he was impeached, and Lieutenant-Governor Gleason was ordered to take his place. The governor appealed to the Supreme Court,



GOV. HARRISON REED, 1868-1873.

which decided that he had not been impeached, as there had been no constitutional quorum in the Senate. Lieutenant - Governor Gleason then proceeded to Washington to lay the case before the Supreme Court of the 1869 United States, but he was unable to secure the displacement of Governor Reed. When

the legislature met in January of the following year, it was decided after a short debate that Harrison Reed was the regular governor, and he was accordingly requested to send in his message. Governor Reed appointed Edmund C. Weeks lieutenant-governor in the place of Gleason. Over this dissension arose, which was not quieted till the election of S. T. Day to that office.

About a year later a second attempt was made by members of the House of Representatives to impeach Governor Reed, but the proposition was voted down.

PUBLIC SCHOOLS: BEGINNING OF PRESENT SYSTEM.
Between 1849 and 1861 some progress was made in establishing public schools, but the war 1869 brought to an end the schools that had been in operation. The present system of public instruction began in 1869 with the school law drafted by the Superintendent of Public Instruction, C. Thurston Chase, after a comparison of the laws of other States. Though the law was at once put in force, the opening of schools was not as fast as expected or wished, owing to the reluctance of the greater part of the white population to accept a system introduced by men who had been *imported* from the North. Superintendent Chase himself had only recently moved from Ohio to Florida. In consequence the negroes at first secured almost the entire benefit of the new educational system, and during the ten years following 1869 the number of public schools increased slowly. The method of grading has been extensively adopted only since 1877. From the year 1880, but especially from the appointment of Superintendent A. J. Russell in 1884, date the fairest pages in the history of public education in Florida.

Q. How did the legislature secure the readmission of Florida into the Union? When were the new officers installed? Why was Governor Reed impeached? Who took his place? Why did the Supreme Court decide that Reed was not impeached? What did Gleason then do? What did the legislature decide in January? What further dissension arose? When was a second attempt made to impeach Governor Reed?

FINANCES. At the beginning of the period of reconstruction in 1868 the debt of the State was very small ; but with the rapid issue of bonds occasioned by the extravagance of the "carpet-baggers", the indebtedness of Florida had by 1871 reached a sum a little short of one and a half millions of dollars. Taxes had to be levied heavier each succeeding year. In 1871 the taxes to support the State government alone amounted to two and a half dollars per capita 1871 of the population, which in 1870 was 187,748.

A request was made of Governor Reed that during the last three months of 1871 no taxes might be collected in order that the people might have this measure of relief. The governor denied the petition, saying that the laws must be enforced.

Under the act of 1855 authorizing State aid to railroads, Florida bonds to the value of four millions of dollars had been issued to the Florida Central and Jacksonville, Pensacola, and Mobile Railroads, and bonds of these railroads had been taken in exchange. When they failed in the early seventies to pay interest on the bonds, the holders looked to the State for payment. She had not enough money to meet the ordinary expenses of the government. She, however, obtained possession of the roads in order to operate them for the benefit of the bondholders, but becoming engaged in a lawsuit over them, and the constitutionality

Q. When does the present system of public schools begin? With whom? Give the cause for the slow opening of schools. Who received the benefit of the schools at first? After what year was "grading" extensively adopted? With whom does the advance begin? What can you say of the increase in the State's indebtedness in 1871? To what was this due? What were the State taxes in 1871?

of the bonds being called into question, she troubled herself no more about them, and later she omitted all mention of them.

A THIRD ATTEMPT TO IMPEACH GOVERNOR REED. In the House of Representatives in February, 1872, a motion was introduced to impeach Governor Reed on fourteen separate charges each relating to 1872 bribery or misappropriation of funds. A court of impeachment was formed, Governor Reed was placed under arrest, and Lieutenant-Governor Day was ordered to act in his place. When the court dismissed the charges on the ground of lack of evidence, Day refused to give up his new authority, claiming that Governor Reed was still under arrest, inasmuch as the Senate had not dismissed the case.

As he refused to refer the matter to the Supreme Court, the governor quietly watched his opportunity, and when the acting-governor was temporarily absent, stepped in, secured the great seal, and issued a proclamation as the regular governor. Day issued a counter proclamation. Governor Reed then applied to the Supreme Court, but was not sustained in his course by the majority of the justices. Finally the legislature was called in May, and the Senate dismissing the case, he was released from arrest and restored to office.

OSSIA B. HART, GOVERNOR. 1873-1874. At the election in 1872 Ossia B. Hart was elected to succeed

Q. What request did Governor Reed refuse in 1871? How many bonds were issued to railroads? Give an account of the repudiation of these. How many charges were brought against Governor Reed? For what? Who was ordered to take his place? Why did Day refuse to give up his new authority? What then did Governor Reed do?

Governor Reed, and Marcellus L. Stearns was elected lieutenant-governor. Florida's representation at Washington was increased by the election at this time of a second representative.

In 1873 for the first time during reconstruction rule the interest on the State debt was paid and the government's expenses met. Governor Hart referred the previous deficiency to the dishonesty and negligence of the officials.



GOV OSSIA B. HART, 1873-74.

When the legislature met in 1874, it was found that the 1874 Democrats had secured a majority of four in the House, and that the Senate was evenly divided between the Democrats and the Republicans. At this session an amendment to the constitution was adopted, to wit, that after 1877 the legisla-

ture should meet every third year.

MARCELLUS L. STEARNS, GOVERNOR: 1874-1877.

Q. How was the matter finally settled? Who became the governor after Governor Reed? How many representatives to Congress were elected? What was done in 1873 for the first time under reconstruction rule? To what did Governor Hart refer the previous deficiency? What party had the majority in the legislature of 1874? What amendment was adopted? Why did Lieutenant-Governor Stearns become governor? Who became United States senator in 1875?

Governor Hart dying in March, 1874, his place was filled by Lieutenant-Governor Stearns, who acted as governor for the remainder of the term.

In 1875 Charles W. Jones was elected United States senator by the Democratic legislature to take the place of the retiring Republican senator.

ELECTION OF 1876: GOVERNOR GEORGE F. DREW. The Republican and Democratic conventions of 1876 put forth as their respective candidates for the governorship Marcellus L. Stearns and George F. Drew. During the summer the Republican party pretended to have definite information of an invasion of the State by armed bands from Georgia and Alabama for the purpose of disturbing the election, thereby aiding the Democrats. But the election passed off quietly. After some delay the "Board",



GOV. MARCELLUS L. STEARNS, 1874-77.

whose duty it was to canvass the election returns, gave out as the result of the first count 24,325 votes for Stearns and 24,282 for Drew. A second count, in which a number of precincts in several counties was cast out, gave a larger Republican majority. Attorney-General W. A. Cocke, one of the three canvassers, filed a protest against the board's action in rejecting votes. The Supreme Court ordered a

recount according to the election laws. The first and the second recount showed a majority of one hundred and ninety-five for the Democratic candidate, who was in consequence declared governor. And he was installed in office without any further opposition. Two Democratic representatives to the national Congress were also elected.

PRESIDENTIAL ELECTORS: "GREAT FRAUD OF '76". The candidates for the presidency of the United States were in 1876 Samuel J. Tilden, Democrat, and Rutherford B. Hayes, Republican. The election was exceedingly close, and on the next morning each party claimed the success of its own candidate; but it was beyond doubt that Tilden wanted only one vote of a majority in the electoral college, and that several States were doubtful, of which Florida was one. All the doubtful States were necessary to give the Republican candidate a majority of one. As soon
1876 as this became evident, numerous prominent Republican politicians from other States hastened to Florida, and it is asserted with much show of truth that they were able so to influence the returns that the "Board" gave it out as a result of the first and second count that the Republican electors were in the majority. Accordingly, Governor Stearns issued to these certificates of their election. Attorney-General Cocke protested against the action of the "Board" and

Q. Who were candidates for the governorship in 1876? What trouble was expected by the Republicans? Give the result of the first two counts of the returns. What did the Supreme Court order? How did the recount result? To what party did the representatives belong? Who were the presidential candidates in 1876? What did each party claim? What was beyond doubt?

issued certificates to the four Democratic electors. At the order of the Supreme Court a recount of the votes was made, which gave to these last electors a majority of ninety-four. Governor Drew then issued a new set of certificates, which were forwarded to Washington, where there were now three sets from Florida.

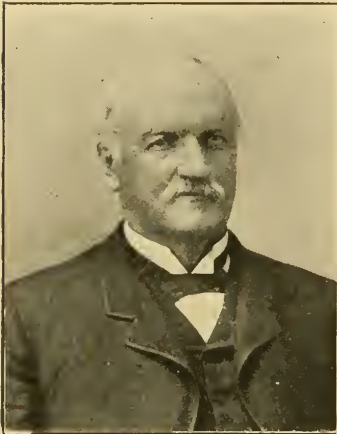
Much difficulty was experienced in finding a satisfactory method of counting the electoral votes, until Congress adopted the plan of an electoral commission of eight Republicans and seven Democrats, whose decision was to be final. The constant party vote of this commission, eight to seven, on all matters affecting the choice of electors from the disputed States, gave the electors from Florida and the other States in dispute to the Republican candidate. Rutherford B. Hayes was proclaimed President of the United States.

Q. Who hastened to Florida? What assertion is made? Who gave the first two sets of certificates? What was the result of a recount? Who issued the third set of certificates? How did Congress solve the difficulty of counting the electoral votes? Give the result of the commission. Who was proclaimed President?

CHAPTER XXIV.

OPENING OF A NEW ERA—DEVELOPMENT OF THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS—CONSTITUTION OF 1885—GENERAL PROGRESS OF THE STATE.

GEORGE F. DREW, GOVERNOR: 1877-1881. DEMOCRATS IN CONTROL. The rule of the reconstruction-



GOV. GEORGE F. DREW, 1877-1881.

ists, or as 1877 they are commonly called, the "carpet-baggers", had weighed heavily on the State for eight years. Too much politics and too much talking for political effect had prevented anything but a slow return to prosperity. The recently emancipated slave had been put in power, and for eight years, instead

of bettering his position through labor, he had been "running the government". With the installation of Governor Drew begins a new era, in which the resources of Florida have been developed in a truly wonderful manner. The control of the State government now came into the hands of the conservative element of the population represented by the Democratic party,

and this party has remained in absolute control since the election of Wilkinson Call in 1879 to succeed Senator Conover in the United States Senate. However, there was not much headway made during Governor Drew's administration, owing to the still uncertain state of politics. Economy was the chief object of the administration, in order to lessen the public debt and to relieve the people from the burden of taxation. During the first year of his office Governor Drew was able to lower the rate of taxation by two and a half mills, and in the following year to lower it still further. The taxable property of the State was at this time about thirty millions of dollars.

During 1878 and 1879 a route was surveyed for a proposed canal to connect the St. Mary's River with the Gulf of Mexico at St. Marks or at Cedar Keys. It was found by this survey that there would not be enough water to supply the locks, for the country was discovered to be higher than was supposed. The project was in consequence given up. Other routes have been proposed at various times since 1879.

WILLIAM D. BLOXHAM, GOVERNOR: 1881-1885.
Governor Drew was succeeded in 1881 by William D.

Bloxham. With Governor Bloxham's term 1881 of office coincides a sudden stride forward in the progress of the State. This begins more directly in 1881 with the sale of four millions acres of the public land to Hamilton Disston and as-

Q. How long were the reconstructionists in power? What made progress slow? With whom does a new era begin? What element of the population came into power? Why was not much headway made during this administration? What was its chief object? How much was the rate of taxation lowered the first year?

sociates of Philadelphia. The money received from the sale enabled the government to carry out many schemes of improvement which she had before been prevented from doing on account of the lack of funds. Most of the Disston lands lay east of the Kissimmee. Another company was also formed by Disston which



GOV. W. D. BLOXHAM, 1881-1885; 1897 —.

had as its object the draining of Lake Okeechobee by means of a canal connecting with the Caloosahatchie River. The completion of this canal four years later lowered the level of the lake and rendered fit for cultivation two million acres of overflowed land. About this period numerous other land and canal companies sprang into

existence representing American and foreign capital. More corporations of this character have been in operation in Florida than in any other State. Much of her prosperity has been due to them.

In spite of the many railroads that had been planned

Q. Give an account of the canal route surveyed in 1878-79. Who succeeded Governor Drew? With what does a sudden advance in the State's prosperity begin? What was she enabled to do? Where did the Disston lands lay? What other company did Disston form? What was accomplished by the canal? What can you say of the number of land corporations in Florida?

there were only five hundred miles in operation in 1882. In the next four years, however, over seven hundred and fifty additional miles of road were constructed. Nearly eighteen hundred miles have been built in the ten years from 1885 to 1895, making nearly three thousand miles of railroad in the latter year.

At this period the orange industry began to assume the importance which it has since attained among the industries of the State.

Owing to the rapid advance in the wealth of Florida during the four years of Governor Bloxham's administration, her taxable property was doubled in 1885 in value and in 1885 was put down as over sixty millions of dollars. The last message of the governor says: "Florida has never occupied the high position that she does to-day in the financial world. . . . she has no floating debt, and cash in the treasury to meet all legitimate expenses."

PUBLIC SCHOOLS UNDER SUPERINTENDENT A. J. RUSSELL. When Governor Bloxham in 1884 appointed Albert J. Russell Superintendent of Public Instruction, the right man seems to have been selected to allay the old prejudice against the school system, to breathe throughout the State a spirit of confidence in public schools, to create a willingness to submit to taxation for the support of education, and to infuse into his teachers an earnest desire for excellence. The

Q. Give an account of railroads since 1882. What industry began to assume great importance at this time. How was the value of the taxable property increased during Governor Bloxham's administration? What does the governor say in his message? What can you say of Superintendent Russell? How great was the increase in the number of scholars between 1884 and 1890?

number of schools rapidly increased, and the number of pupils was doubled in the six years from 1884 to 1890. Superintendent Russell's last report in 1892 gives 93,780 as the total number of school children enrolled at that time.

Teachers' institutes began with appropriations made by the legislature of 1883. The first State teachers' institute was held at DeFuniak in February, 1886, where it has met on several subsequent occasions. Two normal schools were opened in October, 1887, one at Tallahassee for negro teachers, the other at De Funiak for the instruction of white teachers. An institution for the blind and the deaf opened its doors in 1884 at St. Augustine. A "Florida university" issued its only catalogue for the session of 1884-85. After a history dating from the legislature of 1870 the State Agricultural College became a reality with its establishment at Lake City, where the first catalogue was published in June, 1886.

Among the numerous private institutions for higher education that have sprung into existence during the last fifteen years may be named the Rollins College at Winter Park (1885), the John B. Stetson University at DeLand, which first opened as the DeLand University (1887), and the Florida Conference College at Leesburg (1887). The Jasper Normal Institute, begun at Jasper in the early 80's, is one of the most flourishing of the educational institutions of the State.

CONSTITUTION OF 1885. The question of holding
1885 a convention for the purpose of making certain changes in the constitution, having been agitated since 1878, was decided in the negative

at the election of 1880. But the need for such a convention becoming more apparent, a vote was taken in 1885, the convention was decided on, and the delegates elected, who met in June and 1886 framed a constitution which was ratified by the people in the following year. There was to be no longer a lieutenant-governor. The administrative officers, such as the Superintendent of Education, were to be elected by the people, not appointed by the governor as heretofore. State senators were limited to thirty-two, and the representatives to sixty-eight.

EDWARD A. PERRY,
GOVERNOR: 1885-
1889. Governor Blox-
ham's suc-
cessor in
1885 was Ed-
ward A. Perry, a na-
tive of Massachusetts,
who had settled in
Florida before the



GOV. EDWARD A. PERRY, 1885-1889.

civil war, and who had risen to the rank of brigadier-general in the Confederate service. During Governor Perry's administration Florida was "on a boom". A

Q. How many scholars were reported as enrolled in 1892? What can you say of institutions for the education of teachers? Name some other public educational institutions. Mention some private educational institutions. Give an account of the constitution of 1885.

stronger tide of immigration than ever set in from the North, chiefly to the eastern portion of the State, where many winter resorts arose, magnificent hotels
1887 were built, and towns were established in rapid succession, too numerous to mention
1888 in the short space of a school history. The great Ponce de Leon hotel at St. Augustine was completed in 1887 at a cost of two and a half millions of dollars. During this year alone nine new railroad companies were incorporated. A slight check to this rapid development was experienced in 1888 when a scourge of yellow fever broke out in Tampa, and from there spread to Jacksonville, where it raged



Cox, St. Augustine.

HOTEL PONCE DE LEON.

for several months. From this city, however, the fever was carried to only a few of the surrounding towns.

FRANCIS P. FLEMING, GOVERNOR: 1889-1889 1893. The next governor following Governor Perry, was Francis P. Fleming, whose term of office expired in 1893.

A new impulse was given to the progress of Florida by the discovery of large beds of phosphate near Dunellon in Marion county during the first 1889 years of this administration. Phosphate had been discovered two years before by Dr. J. Kost, but no notice was taken of the discovery till the mines at Dunellon were opened by a syndicate in 1889, when much excitement was created, and tracts of land containing phosphate were sold at speculative prices. Soon the majority of the counties reported mines of more or less richness. The export of phosphate in 1895 amounted to five hundred thousand tons.

The election of a United States senator to succeed 1891 Senator Call resulted in a lively contest. Senator Call himself received a majority of the votes cast on the joint ballot of the legislature. Governor Fleming, however, appointed his successor on the ground that there had been no quorum in the Senate;



GOV. FRANCIS P. FLEMING, 1889-1893.

Q. Mention some change made by the constitution. Who succeeded Governor Bloxham? What was the condition of Florida under his administration? Give some of the events of the "boom". What great hotel was completed in 1887? Give an account of the yellow fever in 1888. Who succeeded Governor Perry? What discovery was made in 1889?

but when the matter was referred to the national Senate, Senator Call was given the seat. At the expiration of his term in 1897 another contest arose, and this time his successor was elected in the person of Stephen R. Mallory, son of the Confederate Secretary of Navy.

Owing to an enlargement of the State's expenses the governor was compelled to increase the bonded debt, which was after this increase \$1,232,500.

The People's Party was organized at Ocala in 1892.



Morast, Tampa.

TAMPA BAY HOTEL.

HENRY L. MITCHELL, GOVERNOR: 1893-1897. Governor Fleming was followed in 1893 by Henry L.

Mitchell. William N. Sheats succeeded Superintendent Russell in the superintendency of public instruction. The new superintendent at once introduced a new school law, according to which teachers' certificates were divided into six classes and were to be obtained only after a strict examination. The examinations were made uniform

Q. What effect did the discovery have? Give the amount of phosphate exported in 1895. Give an account of the reelection of Senator Call. Why was it necessary to increase the State's debt? To what amount? What party was organized at Ocala in 1892? Who succeeded Governor Fleming? Who succeeded Superintendent Russell? What changes did Superintendent Sheats introduce?

over the State. Opposition was encountered at first, but the increase in the efficiency of the teachers demonstrating the wisdom of the change from the old order, this opposition was soon silenced. Superintendent Sheats was reelected in 1896, at the expiration of his first term of office.

December 29, 1894, was the coldest day known in the history of Florida, not excepting the eighth day of

February, 1835, when the St. Johns froze 1894 over several rods from the shore. The orange crop, valued at four millions of dollars, was almost totally destroyed, and the groves were much injured by the killing

of the trees. Pineapples, bananas, and

1896 other tropical fruits also

suffered largely. On the 29th of September, 1896, a hurricane swept over the State, causing directly and indirectly a loss of over ten millions of dollars.

The election of 1896 returned to office ex-

GOVERNOR WILLIAM D. BLOXHAM, who had once before served as Governor from 1881 to 1885.



GOV. HENRY L. MITCHELL, 1893-1897.

Q. How were these changes received? Give the injury inflicted by the cold of December 29, 1894. How great was the loss caused by the hurricane of 1896?

With the beginning of the new administration we have all but reached the limit to which the History of Florida could at present be carried, and we will then fittingly close with a rapid review of events from the days of Juan Ponce de Leon.

RETROSPECT. Three hundred and eighty-five years have passed since the old Spanish cavalier bestowed the name of Florida on the land he had discovered. From signifying almost the whole of North America Florida gradually narrowed down under the encroachments of French and British colonists till Spain surrendered to England a Florida which lay east of the Perdido River and south of the thirty-first parallel of north latitude. For twenty years English enterprise brought such prosperity as Florida had never known before and scarcely since, only to have it perish when Spain once again became owner. Nearly eighty years ago the United States purchased the provinces of East and West Florida. So rapidly did the new territory grow that in 1845 it was admitted into the Union as a State. The Civil War and reconstruction checked her growth, but only for a time. Since the beginning of Governor Bloxham's first administration the wealth of Florida has increased more than threefold, and the population has been

Q. Who was elected governor in 1896? How long has it been since Ponce de Leon discovered Florida? What did "Florida" mean at first? When Spain surrendered it to England? What can you say of the prosperity under English rule? Give a review of Florida's history from 1783 to 1881. Give a review from Governor Bloxham's first administration to his second.

doubled. In this period nearly three thousand miles of railroad have been built, millions of acres of swamp lands have been redeemed, the cultivation of tropical and other fruits has made Florida almost one vast garden, and, finally, schools and colleges have been established ranking with those of any State.

Folch, Vincente.....176
 Fountain of Youth..... 2
 Francis, Prophet.....205
 French in Florida.....34, 39
 Gaines, General.....239
 Galvez, Don Bernardo de...166, 168
 Genet, Minister.....176
 George, Fort.....168
 Georgia119, 127
 Gold to be found in warm coun-
 tries 13
 Gourgues, Dominic de.....64, 68
 Grant, James.....140
 "Great Fraud of '76".....326
 Hart, O. B.....323
 Hawkins, G. S.....285
 Hawkins, Sir John..... 40
 Home Guards.....305
 Indians71-94
 Jackson, Gen. Andrew.....204, 216
 Jacksonville224, 300
 Jefferson, Fort.....288
 Jesup, General.....241, 248
 Johnstone, George140
 Key West224
 Kindelan, Gov. of E. Fla.....183
 King, Col.....211
 Lafayette, Grant of Land to...223
 Land Companies.....329, 330
 Land Grants.....214
 Laudonnière, René de.....36, 53
 Louisiana Purchase.....181
 Luna, Tristan de.....28-32
 Macomb, Gen.....252
 Malee206
 Mallory, S. R.....283
 Marianna224
 Marion, Fort99-102
 Marvin, Wm.....316
 Masot, Don José.....210
 Matanzas55-57
 Maurique, M. G.....183
 McGillivray, A.....155

McRae, Fort.....286, 297
 Meade, Gen.....318
 Menendez de Aviles, P...44, 51, 59
 63, 68
 Milton, John.....280, 313
 Missions95, 97, 98
 Mitchell, H. L.....336
 Mobile District.....182, 184
 Monteano, Gov.....127, 130
 Monticello224
 Moore, Gov., Invades Florida...107
 110
 Moosa, Fort.....123
 Moseley, W. D.....274
 Moultrie, Gov.....150
 Narvaez, Panfilo de..... 13
 Natural Bridge, Battle at.....313
 Navy Yard at Pensacola.....288
 New Smyrna.....143, 152
 Oglethorpe, Gen. Jas...119, 127, 130
 Okeechobee, Battle of.....247
 "Old Rory".....158
 Olustee308
 O'Neil, Arthur.....176
 Ortiz, Juan..... 20
 Osceola233, 245
 Palatka224
 Panton, Wm.....153, 174
 Payne, King.....188
 Pensacola102, 114, 132, 133, 141
 146, 195, 197, 301, 307
 Pensacola, ship.....177
 People's Party.....336
 Perdido River.....103
 Perry, E. A.....333
 Perry, M. S.....278
 Phosphate discovered.....335
 Pickens, Fort.....289, 291, 296
 Ponce de Leon, Juan...3, 5, 8
 Pope, Gen. J.....317
 Quesada, Gov. of E. Fla.....180
 Red Sticks.....193
 Reed, Harrison.....320, 323
 Reed, Robert R.....270
 Representative Government 149, 162

Revolutionary War.....	151	Tallahassee	222
Ribaut, Jean.....	34, 43, 54, 58	Taylor, Fort.....	289
Rogel, Father.....	97	Taylor, Gen. Z.....	247, 251
Russell, A. J.....	331	Tecumseh	191
St. Augustine....	60, 62, 69, 101, 120 133, 136, 187, 300	Thompson, Gen., Murder of....	236
St. Johns Bluff.....	304	Tonyn, Patrick.....	150
St. Johns River.....	34	"Twelve-mile Swamp".....	188
St. Josephs.....	113, 224	Vidal Affair.....	217
St. Marks.....	113	Villafañe, Angel de.....	32
St. Maxent, Don F. M.....	183	Voyages on Gulf Coast.....	8
Salt Works Destroyed.....	307	on Atlantic Coast.....	8
San Carlos.....	103, 117, 208	Walker, David S.....	317
San Mateo.....	53	Weatherford	193
Schools	279, 321, 331	West Florida..	137, 165, 169, 183, 207 210, 216
Scott, Gen. W. S.....	240	West Florida, Republic of.....	183
Secession, Convention for.....	282	White, Enrique.....	176, 183
Seminoles	74, 229, 235	Withlacochee, Battle of.....	239
Seminole War, First.....	204	Worth, General.....	257
Second	235, 264	Yemasseees in Florida.....	112
Sheats, Wm. N.....	336	Yulee (Levy), David.....	274, 283
Social Life in Territory.....	226	Zuniga, M.....	183
Soto, Hernando de.....	19, 23, 26		
South Carolina.....	105, 106, 111		
Stearns, M. L.....	324		

W. DEN
Pine
Bluffs
M...
M...
M...
M...
M...
M...
Pensacola

30

29

28

W

27

W
H
D



Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing Agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date:

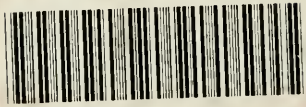


PRESERVATION TECHNOLOGIES, L.P.
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111

N/S



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 005 457 660 2

